

Teacher's Collected Articles and Lectures

2005 and 2006

Table of Contents

To the 2005 European Experience Sharing Conference	2
We Are Not "Getting Political"	3
New Year's Greetings	6
Turning the Wheel Towards the Human World.....	6
Teaching the Fa at the Western U.S. International Fa Conference	9
Teaching the Fa at the 2005 Manhattan International Fa Conference	39
Teaching the Fa at the 2005 Canada Fa Conference	46
To the European Fa Conference in Stockholm	52
Teaching the Fa in the City of Chicago.....	53
Study the Fa Well, and Getting Rid of Attachments is Not Hard	57
Shed the Human Mindset	57
To all Dafa disciples around the world and in mainland China, a happy Mid-Autumn Festival!	58
A Will That Ebbs Not	58
Walk Straight Your Path	59
To the Prague Fa Conference	59
The Closer to the End, the More Diligent You Should Be	60
The Red Tide's Wane	62
Mature	63
To the Israel Fa Conference	64
Teaching the Fa in San Francisco, 2005 (Lecture and Q&A)	65
A Reply to the Dafa Disciples of Peru	104
Teaching the Fa at the Meeting on Writing Music	105
Congratulatory Message	118
Eliminating the Evil	119
Teaching the Fa in the City of Los Angeles	121
Pass the Deadly Test.....	163
The Ukraine Fa Conference	165
Teaching the Fa in Canada, 2006	166
For the Good of the World	174
To the Chicago Fa Conference	175
Opening the Gate of the World	175
Teaching the Fa at the Fa Conference at the U.S. Capital	176
Thoroughly Dissolve the Evil	183
To the Australia Fa Conference	184

To the 2005 European Experience Sharing Conference

Greetings to all Dafa disciples at the conference!

While going through the persecution that has lasted for over five years, the Mainland Dafa disciples have—much as have the European Dafa disciples and Dafa disciples all over the world, who are exposing the persecution, clarifying the facts, and saving sentient beings—done what Dafa disciples should do. The Dafa disciples' combined efforts have made the truth known around the entire world and will leave the evil with no place to hide. This has fully displayed the magnificence of the Dafa disciples of the righteous Fa and righteous belief.

Everyone, keep up your diligent efforts! Human history does not exist for [people] to take being human as its final goal, nor is human history a recreation ground created for the evil to display its viciousness. Mankind's history was established for the Fa-rectification, and only Dafa disciples are worthy of displaying their glory here.

Once again, I wish complete success for the Dafa disciples' experience sharing conference!

Li Hongzhi

January 15, 2005

We Are Not "Getting Political"

With regard to the persecution of Falun Gong by the malevolent CCP, many Chinese people who don't know the truth have over the past few years believed, owing to that party having infused the Chinese people with its Party's culture over half a century of rule, that the persecution was justified. The CCP has led the Chinese people to judge things, consider things, and act based on a mindset steeped in that Party's culture—a culture created with specific ends in mind. Having been through this ideological remolding, the Chinese people can no longer judge things, consider things, or act as do normal people. Under the influence of the Party's culture, whenever foreign countries are brought up, the basis of these people's thinking is “those capitalist countries that oppose the malevolent CCP.” But the reality is, those countries are normal forms of society in the world. Whenever problems that exist in China are brought up, the basis of the Chinese people's thinking sees it in terms of “anti-China forces.” The extent is such that if someone mentions the CCP there will be people who think he is referring to China itself. And when someone talks about “the Chinese nation,” there will be people who conflate that concept with the CCP. And it goes even further: whenever a problem needs to be addressed, the first thought is about how to crush others, and the means include rule by force, attacks, launching political campaigns, suppression, denunciations, and the like.

Right now, the CCP is at the end of the line, being mired in corruption and beset by crises on all fronts. Yet when the Chinese people curse the malevolent CCP, their opposition to that party is still within the context of the consciousness created by that same party's culture, and they are in fact still viewing the Party from within the Party's culture. Some people even have the mentality of, “How could China exist without that X party?” But over the 5000 years of Chinese history, which dynasty wasn't followed by a new one after its fall? And haven't the countries of Eastern Europe done just fine since the malevolent party collapsed there? And don't forget that human society is in the hands of gods. It will fall into chaos if such is their will, and nothing can disturb it if they wish otherwise.

When Chinese people come to Western society, the people of this society can't understand their words or actions, and they find them odd. The words and actions of CCP leaders on their visits overseas make Westerners question their rationality. Then just how warped has this Party's culture made the thinking and culture of the Chinese people? Even people at the level of the Central Committee of the CCP can't escape that warping of thought, action, and culture. The deviation of human thought has made it easy for the CCP to find a legal pretext for its constant litany of suppressions of the Chinese people. Even today, when the slogan “our party has always been right” no longer works, the CCP has—in order to maintain the legitimacy of its monopoly on power—driven this confusion further so as to capitalize on and stir up the Chinese people's ardent patriotism and keep heightening patriotic sentiment, even mixing in ideas like “If there were no X Party there would be no China,” “To love the country is to love the Party,” and, “To love the Party is to love the country.” They keep making people's thinking confused and deceiving the Chinese people.

Following its failure in persecuting Falun Gong, the CCP rolled out a saying: “Falun Gong is colluding with anti-China forces.” After Falun Gong exposed the truth about the CCP's persecution, the CCP again stirred people up, saying, “The Falun Gong are unpatriotic.” That has resulted in Falun Gong students indeed seeing, as they go about exposing the persecution and clarifying the facts, that some Chinese won't listen one bit to what they have to say. Those people truly believe that what the Party says is surely correct, that what the Communist government says is surely correct, and they believe that Falun Gong really is as the CCP portrays it.

Dafa is saving people. Dafa disciples are compassionate. For the sake of mankind's future, they are telling the world's people the facts of the persecution so that people may see clearly the persecution's

wickedness, and that is stopping the persecution. But with the CCP's "one hall, one voice"¹ and its overwhelming, slanderous propaganda, some people have indeed been fooled by that deceptive, false propaganda. And these people include those who felt deceived and cheated after experiencing firsthand the mass campaigns of the past, or were even persecuted in them, and they include as well those who grew up amidst the Party's culture right from birth. But there truly are many among them who are good people and have good inborn quality. Even so, they have been fully taken in by the Party's propaganda and brainwashing.

What should be done, given these circumstances? The only thing that can be done is to strip naked this vile party that persecutes Dafa disciples and let the Chinese people and people of the world see this party—a party they have believed and that has always claimed to be "great, glorious, and correct"—for what it really is. After *The Epoch Times* carried the *Nine Commentaries on the X Party*, the CCP again started cooking up stories and telling lies, alleging that, "Falun Gong is getting political." The fact is, whoever has something to say about the Party will be called "getting political," and that is in turn used to deceive the Chinese people. Actually, the Chinese people are fearful of and attach a negative sense to "getting involved with politics" because of the very Party-culture that the Party has instilled in them. Anywhere outside those nations ruled by the malevolent CCP, being a "politician" would seem a rather elite designation.

Falun Gong is not involved in politics. That's something lived experience has shown, and it is something the world has recognized. If our efforts to stop and expose the persecution by evildoers and the CCP are now being labeled as getting political, then we might as well spell things out completely—like what Falun Gong is, what the malevolent CCP is, and why the malevolent CCP wants to persecute Falun Gong. As for what Falun Gong is, Dafa disciples have explained that to the world's people in their all-out efforts to clarify the facts, and people the world over have come to understand. Then what's left is to help the world's people see what the malevolent CCP is about and why it persecutes Falun Gong. And that is done, in fact, to stop the persecution, not to get political. We have no political motives. We are cultivators, people walking the road to godhood, we transcend the human world, and we neither seek nor covet the fame and profit found in this world. We expose the evildoers and that vile party in order to stop the wicked persecution, and it is done to awaken and save the sentient beings who have been deceived by the evil.

In order to prevent misunderstandings by those who have lost their way in the Party's culture, I told Dafa disciples in Mainland China not to incorporate the *Nine Commentaries* as they clarify the truth. But the Fa-rectification is progressing rapidly and the circumstances in which Dafa disciples validate the Fa are changing. Recently the CCP's lies and propaganda have again been pushing fabrications such as the "self-immolation" and been spreading fake versions of the *Nine Commentaries* so as to further poison the minds of the world's people. This has created more obstacles for clarifying the truth and saving the world's people. And so, to have the world's people be aware of that vile party's nature and why it has persecuted Dafa disciples, it has become necessary for people to learn about the *Nine Commentaries*.

Actually, nowadays is there a single Chinese person who still believes in Communism? Even between that evil ringleader and the current Central Committee of the CCP you can't find a single person who really believes in the malevolent CCP. The moment the Party and that evil ringleader exclaimed that they wanted to "defeat Falun Gong," the gods gave the verdict that the Party must be dissolved and destroyed. At present the gods are comprehensively destroying all of the Party's factors. Who in their right mind would want to now, at this final juncture, be the scapegoat for all the crimes committed by

¹ Meaning one person or entity alone has the say and determines how things are to be done.

the malevolent Communist Party over the last one-hundred-plus years? Well, somebody is about to end up bearing all the blame for the malevolent Communist Party's crimes, and [the fact that he risked this situation] must be the result of his having been intoxicated by political power. In reality, though, the exposing of the Communist evil spirit is not directed at certain people. The *Nine Commentaries* aim to save all beings whose minds have been poisoned by the evil, which includes members of the malevolent CCP, those in the CCP's most powerful organs, and the common people. The goal is to help beings in all realms see clearly the factors behind the malevolent CCP.

Actually, it's not all that wrong for the people of this world to live for power or their own gain, but why do you have to join the ranks of those wicked beings that poison and harm the human race? People, you need to wake up! If you have truly lost sight of the purpose of being human, then nothing could be more terrible! If you, as somebody in this world, are truly waiting for and searching for the path of return, then wise up!

I'll share with the world some Truth: when a God or Buddha descends to the world, and when an upright Fa is taught, there are bound to be depraved demons that interfere. A whole range of things described in legends and things passed down through religions might well be, right now, happening. Don't let your human thinking block your true nature, and even less should you sin against people who are on the road to godhood.

Li Hongzhi

January 26, 2005

New Year's Greetings

Dafa disciples in Mainland China, Dafa disciples around the world, Happy New Year! The Year of Yiyou has begun. During this year, Fa-rectification's enormous force will bring changes to mankind. That being the case, all the more so should you do well the three things that Dafa disciples should do, let go of attachments, and not look with human thoughts at what Dafa disciples need to recognize: the persecution and the true nature of the evil party that has been persecuting us.

We have not been doing political work, we have not been picking fights with the human race's real evil cult, and even less so do we want any worldly political power. During the persecution, we must be clear that we are saving the people in the world who have been misled by the Party's culture, because they believe in that cult so much that they won't even listen to the truth. Also, what we are doing is having those students who are not clearheaded on this issue recognize its evil nature. It is a human attachment that must be let go and a step that has to be taken as part of the process of validating the Fa. Don't use human notions to judge the Fa-rectification or the form in which Dafa disciples cultivate, and don't always prolong the process of improving your understanding due to your human thoughts. You are people walking the path to godhood, and every single attachment will hinder you.

The path that Master tells you to take is sure to be righteous. I hope you will complete—soberly, rationally, and with righteous thoughts—your journey to Consummation.

Li Hongzhi

New Year's Day, The Year of Yiyou
February 9th, 2005

Turning the Wheel Towards the Human World

Those Dafa disciples who haven't lived in Mainland China find it hard to understand what goes on under the rule of the CCP. In particular, when the Dafa disciples from Mainland China and Dafa disciples in Mainland China renounce the various organizations of the CCP, they see that many Dafa disciples were Communist Party members, and they can't come to terms with it and think, "How could Dafa disciples be Communist Party members?" It is especially hard for Dafa disciples in non-Communist countries to understand. The reality is, in Mainland China, before Dafa disciples took up cultivation they, too, were educated in the Party's culture. At that time in Mainland China, the CCP *was* China, and China's upper-middle class had to be a class of Party members. It had become the way of things in society. When under those circumstances many people joined the Party, it wasn't because they wanted to become a part of it, nor was it because they actually believed in it. Rather, it was the only way for people to make it in that society. It seemed as though Chinese people just had to go that route; to do otherwise would get you branded a heretic and made a target for public denouncement by the CCP. Of course, the Party's truly evil henchmen are a different story. And some people didn't join the Party of their own will—many were pressured to join or joined as their work units collectively joined. Even though Dafa disciples have issued statements publicly withdrawing from the CCP, they in fact stopped being members of the Communist Party or the Communist Youth League long ago, because according to the CCP's regulations, those who don't pay party dues for six months are automatically considered to have withdrawn from the Party. When the CCP began to persecute Falun Gong in 1999, didn't they say I had joined the Communist Youth League in the past? The truth is, back then there were

only two people in my entire work unit who were still not members of the Communist Party or the Communist Youth League, and I was one of them. At that time my work unit stipulated that every single person had to join either the Party or the League. If we still didn't join we would have been considered by the CCP heretics, so it was more like going through the motions.

In the Fa-rectification, Master is actually saving all beings, not just the good ones; evil ones are of course included as well. I have often said that during the Fa-rectification I don't hold the past faults of any sentient being against him, and that I look only at a sentient being's attitude toward Dafa during the Fa-rectification. In other words, no matter which beings they are or how huge the mistakes and sins they committed in history, as long as they do not play a negative role with regard to the Fa-rectification, I can give them benevolent solutions and eliminate their sins and karma. That is the greatest mercy and true salvation. That's because in the universe positive and negative beings co-exist, and that is the principle of *yin* and *yang* and their mutual generation. It is the CCP itself that chose to make Dafa its enemy. From the moment it proclaimed that it must defeat Falun Gong, the evil spirit of the CCP and the CCP's wicked, base group that has been persecuting Dafa disciples in the human world were condemned to death by all of the cosmos's gods. Actually, when I spread Dafa it was done in the CCP's society. Had it not persecuted Dafa disciples, it would have ended up making the greatest contribution in all of the cosmos. Besides, my teaching the Fa in that society benefited the society in many, many ways and did not an ounce of harm. When people's health improved, for whom did that reduce medical expenses? When people had healthy bodies, to whose society did those people contribute? That Party has done so many bad things that it is afraid of losing power and thus always stresses "social stability." When Dafa was being widely spread people's morality improved, and due to Dafa's overall situation the society began to truly stabilize. Of course, Dafa wasn't spread for the purpose of stabilizing human society; that was a result of the improvement in morality. Many people, ranging from the CCP's central leadership down to the different classes in society, had recognized that fact. However, the CCP's true nature is, after all, that of a cult which contains all evilness there is. It couldn't stand Dafa despite [the benefits it brought]. Its extremely arrogant and twisted mentality that desires to control heaven, control earth, control people, and control people's minds, couldn't handle even that little bit of irritant. And even though it had benefited from the spreading of Dafa, that made no difference, and it was dead set on eliminating Falun Gong before it could be satisfied. Furthermore, that wretched one in the human world of course was driven out of its mind by jealousy, and stubbornly went ahead with its wishes, refusing to listen to others. It made a perfect partner for the evil spirit of the Communist Party. They not only made Dafa their enemy, but during the persecution they have also exhausted all means of persecution and have persecuted to death or severely injured numerous Dafa disciples who were or are on the path to godhood and who had been chosen ages and ages ago. Tens of millions of people have been persecuted through a variety of means, and the righteous faith of 100 million people has been suppressed. This enormous sin of the ages, this enormous sin whereby the [perpetrators] are brimming with evil and guilty of countless crimes throughout the firmament, has enraged all of the gods in the colossal firmament! Now even the elements of the old forces that had controlled and manipulated it are hurriedly dissolving it and its evil spirit. The evil furor is gone. It's not that those bad people have changed, though, but that the evil spirit that was controlling them has been decimated. In other words, the CCP's demise is not the result of a decision made at the beginning of the Fa-rectification that it would be eliminated. Fa-rectification is to rectify all bad beings, thereby saving all lives. It is the CCP that chose to make Dafa its enemy. Of course, cultivators have no enemies, and nobody is worthy of being Dafa's enemy. The purpose of exposing the evil is to stop it from doing evil. In the past when we clarified the truth we always said that we were not against the Party, but that absolutely didn't mean [we] loved it or recognized it, and it didn't mean we repudiated it either. It meant that cultivators have nothing to do with any organization, political party, or substantive form in human society. In other

words, if the CCP hadn't done evil against Dafa, whether a person is a Party member or not would be a non-issue. And if we look at it from this perspective, wasn't my joining the League when I was young giving it an opportunity? Now, however, not only has the Party committed acts of evil, but its sins are unforgivable and its nature is no longer the same. And that naturally imperils CCP members. If a person doesn't withdraw from it, he is a part of it, one of its particles, and a part of its composition, and he will become a target for elimination by all gods. When that chapter of mankind's history starts, there will be no more chances for human beings. Through clarifying the truth, Dafa disciples have given plenty of chances to human beings. In today's historic time, human beings must choose a path for the future of their existence. Whether someone listens [to us] or not is a way in which he chooses his future. Taking into consideration the above situations, [you will see that] although some Dafa disciples were members of the Party or the League at some point, it wasn't their fault, and the fault lies with the Party's head and the Party's evil spirit that chose to do evil. Dafa disciples do not want to leave behind any blemishes; their making a renunciation is not "getting political," and even less is it going through a formality. Rather, it is an attachment that needs to be removed in cultivation. No one can reach Consummation if they remain marked by, or if they acknowledge, the most evil thing in the entire cosmos. In addition, only when Dafa disciples are able to clearly recognize it for what it is, purge it from their minds and no longer let it interfere with their thinking, can they have stronger righteous thoughts and do well what Dafa disciples should do; it is a step in cultivation that you have to take.

Li Hongzhi

February 15, 2005

Teaching the Fa at the Western U.S. International Fa Conference

(Long applause) Good afternoon! You've been working hard.

Winter is over and spring is here. Just like the cycle of spring, summer, fall, and winter, changes have been happening throughout the long process of humankind's history, and all kinds of things have been continually taking place, thereby establishing and creating for humankind the culture that would be needed at the final stage. Over the ages there have been many cultivators and many cultivation ways, but there are differences among all of the cultivation ways. During the last two thousand years or so some religions of upright faith emerged. Although the people in those religions believe in gods, the religions' cultivation methods are different, and they even oppose and disapprove of one another. Of course, there is a reason for their opposing one another: it is so that they can keep the forms of their religions stable and unchanging. In other words, people's upright faith in gods has taken different forms. Before the Fa-rectification began in the human world, no single cultivation way was specially designated in the cosmos as the set method that had to be uniformly [practiced], where all people in the world who believed in gods would have to follow that path. That is something that never happened before. As you've noticed, the cultivation way that Dafa disciples practice today is likewise different from the religions and the cultivation ways of every period throughout history. It's not just different: in fact, when you look at it the differences are enormous. In the past the gods all saw an issue, which was that they thought human beings couldn't cultivate successfully unless they chose to leave ordinary society and not cultivate in the secular world. When people are faced with things that involve their self-interest or practical gain, and when all kinds of human thoughts interfere with a cultivator in the "real" world, it is really hard for cultivators to improve themselves, and it makes those who are trying to save them feel hard-pressed to fulfill their aspiration. That's why no one dared to take this path before. As for saving people on a large scale and having a large number of cultivators involved, they felt that there would be no way to manage the cultivators or to save them when they became mixed in with the ordinary society. That's why with the cultivation methods and means of salvation of the past, no one even dared to think about, much less actually have, cultivators carry this out in the secular world.

The path Dafa disciples are taking today is unprecedented. A fixed notion has formed in the minds of many people in the world, which is that when someone is devoted to a religious faith or is a cultivator, it won't work out unless he withdraws from society and leaves the secular world. The Dafa disciples' way of cultivation, then, has no predecessor and no model. I have always said that in cultivation Dafa disciples have no role models. And it's not just that in your personal cultivation you have to walk your own path—even the form of cultivation I have imparted to you has no example to follow. So you just have to blaze this path yourselves. And why is that? You might have realized it already through your experiences in cultivation, and I have spoken before in different settings about this Fa: it is because the historic responsibility that has been bestowed upon Dafa disciples is tremendous, an enormous number of sentient beings are involved, and the requirements for Dafa disciples are extremely high. In addition, in today's world the innate foundation of the sentient beings' souls is substantial. As you know, you are Dafa disciples, and you are part of the Dafa disciples of the Fa-rectification period. Fa-Rectification Period Dafa Disciples have enormous responsibilities, and the meaning of that title is extremely vast. Your ability as Dafa disciples to achieve that much mighty virtue is what determined the uniqueness of your cultivation way. If you weren't to take up this form of cultivation, or if you were to take up any of the cultivation methods of the past, then you, the Fa-Rectification Period Dafa Disciples, couldn't achieve the goals of your cultivation, you couldn't fulfill the enormous responsibility of your missions, and even less could you reach the levels Dafa disciples are to reach or achieve the Attainment Statuses you are to achieve.

This, then, brings about an issue: it's extremely difficult for a person to break out of the secular world,

to successfully cultivate out from among human beings. Besides, no examples from history have been left behind to refer to, and cultivating by following the religions of the past or of modern times doesn't work. People have known how Buddhist monks cultivate, how Daoists cultivate, how Christian and Catholic cenobites cultivate, and how the world's people should believe in god(s). But believing in god(s) is of course different from being someone who cultivates himself, because when you [just] believe in god(s), the best-case scenario is that the god(s) will watch over you to some extent and give you blessings, or, in the case of exceptionally good individuals, they can ascend to a god's paradise and become a common being there. But in all of those scenarios no one gains an Attainment Status. Believing, in an average sense, does not equate to cultivating, and through cultivation one can achieve an Attainment Status. In other words, with an Attainment Status the person won't be just a common being in the heavens—he will have a divine position. And as for Dafa disciples, they are required to achieve extraordinary Attainment Statuses. Since the responsibility is huge, the cultivator is pushed to that level. He has to take on that much responsibility, so the extent of the hardship that comes about is huge. Here I'm not talking about the degree of the challenges that are forced upon you by the old forces, but rather the degree of hardship caused by the cultivation way itself. You have experienced and felt the hardship involved and the tribulations to be endured in this cultivation way, and how hard it is to break out of humanness. During the course of your cultivation, you experience all sorts of human thoughts, all sorts of things involving your self-interest, and all sorts of notions that come at you [to temper you] in every regard, and intertwined with that are irrationality caused by emotion and delusion, and the feeling when you're foggyheaded that it is hard to sever your human attachments. And, in your day-to-day life you have family, society, work, and cultivation to handle, plus the pressure on you as Dafa disciples that was brought about by the persecution and the challenges in every regard due to the persecution. In fact, all of that is only the part you are able to sense—there is also a part that you can't sense. What you do seems ordinary, and the things you do appear very similar to what ordinary people can do by enduring hardships. But it's different. The same thing, when done by Dafa disciples rather than ordinary people, is different, as what you bear and endure is different.

On the surface it appears as though the conditions are the same, but in fact they are different. And why is that? I'll give you an example. There are Christians in various parts of the world who, whenever the anniversary of Jesus' suffering and death comes around, they hold an event where some people actually nail themselves to a cross. Maybe they do that to show their god that they, too, experience that suffering. But that's absolutely different from what Jesus suffered. So why is it different? When Jesus was crucified, human beings could not see that he was atoning for human beings' sins, and that an enormous amount of sin and karma from a great number of people was pressing down on him—both the number and the amount were huge, and it was extremely dense. That was what caused him such enormous suffering. At that time, were he not tortured he still wouldn't have been able to stand steadily. His burden was so great that even to breathe was a challenge. The kind of suffering that came from the pressure from sentient beings' enormous amount of sin and karma, the horrible mental trauma, and the reactions from the harm inflicted upon each cell in his body—those are not things an ordinary person could withstand. That's not something ordinary people could withstand. And imagine what it was like for him to be crucified on top of such agony. [Some things that seem] the same are actually beyond what ordinary people can imagine. [Some things may] appear to be very similar to ordinary people's things, when in fact the situation behind them is completely different—they are like night and day.

Even though Master has reduced a substantial amount of the karma Dafa disciples had originally, since the responsibilities shouldered by Dafa disciples are great, during the Dafa disciples' cultivation, except for the difficulties brought about by a certain amount of karma that they endure, basically all of their suffering results from the process of improving their xinxing. This persecution is something forced upon us by the old forces, and it's not something that the Fa-rectification needed. Despite that, you

have made it through. No matter how hard and arduous the journey has been, you have not stood by when faced with these difficulties, and you have continued on the path of divinity. Of course, some of you just keep tripping over yourselves as you go forward, stumbling and falling one time after another. Some have proceeded pretty well and steadily. No matter what, though, the situation of Dafa disciples' cultivation overall and the situation of Dafa disciples validating the Fa have been very steady and solid. As gods look at it, they see that the situation and trend of the Dafa disciples' cultivation cannot be thwarted. In other words, no matter how hard the journey has been, even though no cultivation way like this ever existed before, the Dafa disciples have successfully battled through the challenges. As you validate the Fa, a lot of things look similar, or identical, to the form of ordinary people's things. However, the factors behind those things, and the Dafa disciples' starting point for doing things, the responsibilities the disciples shoulder, and their goals, are fundamentally different from those of ordinary people.

Right now, due to the partition and interference brought about in human society by the old forces' factors and the factors of the old cosmos, gods cannot openly appear here, and the interfering demons and how they are struck down and destroyed can't be shown to sentient beings. The ways in which cultivators are completely different from ordinary people have always been blocked from view by the partition. The evil has been doing harmful things during this time before the Fa's rectification of the human world arrives. The purpose of doing the Fa-rectification in this human world here is absolutely not to put Dafa disciples or Fa-rectification in delusion. The setting of the Three Realms was created for the Fa-rectification, the purpose being to make this the place for Fa-rectification and to not disturb the divine realms. That's why we use this setting and use these human approaches to validate the Fa. But that doesn't mean we approve of the old forces interfering with the Fa-rectification, it doesn't mean we approve of the things they arranged. Human society is in delusion, and people cannot see how the cosmos truly is or the real situation of beings. That's how beings are at this level, but the situation during the Fa-rectification is presided over by Dafa and it changes according to what is required so that Dafa can save sentient beings. The fact is, at this time Dafa disciples have to do divine things, because for Dafa disciples their personal cultivation is no longer first and foremost. Saving sentient beings and reconstructing the colossal firmament during the Fa-rectification are the purpose. You have to do Fa-rectification things and things to save sentient beings, so you need to clear away the obstacles presented by this environment and validate Dafa. In this situation where you can't see completely, as gods do, the real changes in yourself during your cultivation, you have instead been relying—amidst interference and the trials in which you painfully sever your attachments—on righteous thoughts that come from your constant study of Dafa, and you have been forging ahead. It's really hard to make it through, but Dafa disciples overall have made it through. That is especially remarkable given the past several years of persecution against Dafa disciples that was set up by the old forces. Dafa disciples as a whole have truly made it through. No matter what kinds of things happened with you during this period of time, and even though certain things that really shouldn't have happened did take place and some unsatisfactory things occurred, overall it has been really good, and as a whole you have kept moving forward.

The journey has not yet been completed, and the persecution has not ended, so you have to continue on your path. In terms of the remainder of the journey, I think you have some assurance now. Although it's too late, many of the evil beings that persecuted Dafa disciples and interfered with the Fa-rectification are deeply remorseful now: "Why did we persecute Falun Gong back then? If we hadn't persecuted Falun Gong, we would never have been in this awful predicament." What I am saying is, the future that lies ahead for Dafa disciples is getting brighter and brighter, and you can all see that now. The overall situation of the Fa-rectification in the cosmos has been changing rapidly, because Fa-rectification has been charging ahead at a speed that transcends all times. It is getting closer and closer to this "real"

dimension, and is getting closer and closer to the range that is visible to the human eye. It has been coming closer to the surface from the microcosm, and the range [of space] that is left is very small now. Of course, although the remaining range in the surface human dimension is smaller now, as you know, the final factors are of higher levels, and the volumes of the partitioned factors are larger now. That is why the deficiency of the evil after the reduction of the low-level spirits and foul demons is being made up for now by the partitioned factors. Even though the progression is accelerating, there are still impediments. But regardless, right now it's as though good and evil are standing on two sides of a scale, wherein the evil has completely lost the balance [that it once had] while the Dafa disciples' side is weighing down almost to the bottom. In other words, the success of Fa-rectification and of Dafa disciples' cultivation are inevitable realities now. Our work is not yet completely done, though, and in terms of personal cultivation, each step might be critical in determining whether each Dafa disciple can reach Consummation. I think that no matter how far things go at the end, however bad the interference gets, or if Fa-rectification makes you become completely aware of everything, you still need to cultivate in a noble and upright manner, and not be affected by any positive or negative things—make sure you're not interfered with by any favorable turn of events brought about by the situation or by whatever situation that might arise.

Actually, having been through so much, you are quite levelheaded now, and you can look at a lot of things with righteous thoughts and calmly think things over. With the impact of your righteous thoughts you have effectively stabilized the overall situation of Dafa disciples' validating the Fa. Since you have now matured you understand a lot of things. That prevents any waves of interference from being stirred up, and leaves no gaps for the evil factors to exploit. Whenever human thoughts emerge among Dafa disciples, it is something the evil will take advantage of, and the evil beings will use it to do the bad things they want to do. When Dafa disciples' human thoughts become minimal, when their righteous thoughts become strong, and when they are levelheaded and steady, the evil has nothing to capitalize on then, which makes the situation of Dafa disciples' Fa-validation more stable. Recently, unsteadiness that arises internally among Dafa disciples has been rare. And I'm not just talking about [the Dafa disciples] outside of Mainland China. The same goes for the Dafa disciples inside Mainland China: they have become steadier and steadier as well.

Of course, this being cultivation, some attachments that arise from human thinking are bound to manifest, because it is human beings cultivating, not gods. So since it is human beings cultivating, human thinking will show itself during cultivation, and that's why we will see cases of people who are not diligent. Some students are prone to becoming impulsive, and there are some students whose righteous thoughts are quite poor. They have been used by the old forces to do some bad things. Through these lessons, you will all be attentive to this as you validate the Fa, and you won't be used by the evil factors in the time ahead. As for those students who don't study the Fa, whose righteous thoughts are weak, who have too many human thoughts, and who keep doing bad things, let me tell you: the number of chances you have left is diminishing. I know that even though you have done much that is a disservice to Dafa, you don't truly want to leave Dafa. When all of this comes to an end and when all the Dafa disciples are reaching Consummation, though, what are you going to do? And before that happens, a weeding out of human beings will unfold on a large scale. What are you going to do when that weeding out comes? Master knows everything, but I won't say anything. Go ahead and show how you are, whether it be something positive or negative. You can either be a noble and upright Dafa disciple or be attached to your human side. In the ordinary world you can live your life for whatever it is ordinary people pursue, or out of fear you can drag out an ignoble existence in the shadows. But since you have come close to Dafa, I hope there is a chance to save you, and that is why I keep giving you chances. I will always give you chances, but as for whether you can become a Dafa disciple, whether you want those chances, and whether you can sober up and live in a way that's accountable to

yourself... at this point in time things can't continue to be dragged out. Even if you begin to make up for all of that and try to catch up now, very few chances are left. I think that after a short while even these few chances will be gone.

The things that Dafa disciples are doing now to counter the persecution have astounded the world's people. People have seen the tenacity, extraordinary kindness and forbearance, and rationality that Dafa disciples have displayed while being subjected to frenzied attacks and suppression. Many people are saying: "Falun Gong students are so extraordinary. They're such strong people, and they have withstood such enormous evil." The entire government, which is controlled by the most wicked, malevolent party, has carried out attacks and suppression full throttle, and the country's entire propaganda machine has fabricated lies on an overwhelming scale to deceive the public, causing nearly the entire population to take part in the persecution. Dafa disciples have managed to withstand and make it through this most malevolent suppression and such ruthless Red Terror. That has truly amazed the world's people. And that's despite the fact that the world's people can only see the side that is tangible and real to them. They can't comprehend what lies within Dafa disciples or the deeper meaning of Dafa, and they can't understand the state of Dafa disciples as cultivators, yet the tangible manifestation is sufficient to awaken those people who are going along with the evil and not thinking clearly. How have Dafa disciples managed to act so remarkably? How have they been able to keep their righteous thoughts so steadfast amid this persecution? How have they been able to make the evil collapse on its own as it persecutes Dafa disciples? It's because they are beings of Righteous Fa and Righteous Enlightenment who are forged by Dafa, and they are Disciples of Dafa who have great innate foundations and who are on the journey to godhood, endowed with missions. In fact, during this time before Dafa's mighty Fa-rectification force arrives, they have effected changes in the state of this world. Also, everything that Dafa disciples have shown through their righteous thoughts and righteous actions has now created a field of Dafa in this material dimension of human beings, and this field has had an enormous, positive impact. You are all still in the process of cultivating, [and if it weren't for that,] if another approach were taken, the manifestation of this field would have already become dominant. If it weren't for the fact that your path of cultivation is still unfinished, this righteous field of Dafa would have made every wicked factor in this world and all of the crooked factors of the past dissolve, be cleared away, and vacate their places. You saw how rampant and vicious the evil was in persecuting Falun Gong before. Why is it acting so differently now? It's because the evil things, the various factors that were sustaining the bad people, and the fields they formed in the past have been destroyed, and the enormous righteous factors of Dafa are restraining and destroying those evil things. The bad people have lost the driving force behind them and they are now at a loss.

In other words, there are still some people who are foggyheaded while these gigantic changes are taking place. It's time that they wake up and become aware of what they are doing. The truths and principles that I, Li Hongzhi, have made known have never been disclosed for thousands, well, billions of years, or by any saviors before, no matter who they were, by any of the enlightened beings who came down to this world, no matter how many there have been, or by any of the immortals who enlightened to certain truths, no matter how many there have been. (Applause) This isn't something an ordinary person could do. And what Dafa disciples have demonstrated, have shown in their cultivation, during the process of their cultivation, and what they have been able to enlighten to and validate is all beyond what ordinary people can comprehend, and it cannot be compared to the cultivation states of the past. What's more, as for saving people on such a large scale, and this loosely organized form of cultivation—especially how people are when they cultivate under this loose management—these things, too, are unprecedented. In other words, no matter what angle you look at it from, it should lead you to calmly, really think things over for yourself and to try to clearheadedly comprehend this phenomenon in which Dafa is being spread on a grand scale.

The situation since July 20, 1999, has been changing constantly. You have all seen that the situation of Dafa's Fa-rectification in the cosmos has been changing faster and faster, and it is manifesting more and more in what is tangible to human beings here. But there have always been some students—and of course what I'm talking about here includes students in Mainland China—who say, "We want to keep up with the progress of Fa-rectification. Whatever Master says, we'll do." But in fact when something really needs to get done, I may not explicitly tell you that that is the new situation. You all know that in validating the Fa the situation does change, and that is inevitable. There is definitely a difference between this time when Master is doing Fa-rectification and the time before Master did Fa-rectification. With anything, before and after it's done, and even during the process of it being done, things gradually change. And when something covers a large scope, it involves changes in the situation.

So everyone talks about keeping up with the progress of Fa-rectification, but when the Nine Commentaries came out, a lot of students didn't understand. Then I wrote two short articles, including Turning the Wheel Towards the Human World. At that point everyone seemed to suddenly realize: "Oh, Master has done that, so we should do it too." But actually, if Dafa disciples had thought about it calmly, sensibly, and without using human thinking, they would have understood it immediately: could you possibly reach Consummation with any faith in the CCP or the idea that the CCP, which suppresses Dafa disciples, is good? That's absolutely impossible, right? Our Dafa disciples have read the Nine Commentaries, and since that party is something of that nature, think about how many people in the world have been misled by it and thus don't believe in gods, and how many people are following it and persecuting Dafa disciples and sinning against Dafa. Could we not save those people? Could we possibly approve of it? So I could see that some students were still holding themselves back by way of human thinking, and some lacked righteous thoughts and thought that it was getting involved in politics. That's why I wrote those two short articles. Even so, I know that in Mainland China there is still a group of students whose human thinking is acting up and they don't want to understand. In reality, isn't it fear and the attachment to self-interest that are causing them not to let go of it? In offering salvation, we couldn't have made things any easier—hasn't it been said that people could even make their declarations using aliases? It doesn't matter what name is used, as what gods look at are people's hearts. Gods can see what people are thinking and what they are doing. As for those with reasons that are beyond their control, they can use any name. People's names on earth are not used in the heavens anyway. When people on earth give someone a name, do you think gods follow along and call him that? They don't. Besides, there are a lot of people with the same name. The people on the earth are numbered, and they refer to them by number. (Audience laughs)

Bringing up these things is not to say that some students can't keep up with things or that they are dim-witted. What it is, is that some people's thinking is being interfered with by the evil party's factors—the evil party's factors are having an effect. In the midst of the party culture that was created by the evil, those people's thoughts that would enable them to see it clearly for what it is have been muddled. That warped culture was formed through its being purposefully instilled in you since elementary school, then high school, and all the way up to adulthood, and it started even as far back as when you started to learn and remember things. In other words, nowadays everyone in Mainland China is thinking in the evil-party-culture's way. Of course, if in Fa-rectification the malevolent party hadn't persecuted Falun Gong, then it wouldn't have been an issue, because a lot of confused cultures and ideas will be naturally set right in Fa-rectification. Cultivators wouldn't have needed to do anything in that regard, and the evil specter of that party would have been rectified as well and thus saved. But once it started persecuting Falun Gong, it became the most evil specter, for this is a time when Dafa disciples are validating the Fa and Dafa is carrying out the Fa-rectification. So Dafa disciples need to see it clearly for what it is, and people that are represented by it need to clearly state their stance in terms of whether they will follow that malevolent demon or choose what is bright and an eternal life. They must

understand this issue soberly now. The gods are set on purging it from humankind. And also, it has indeed been persecuting Dafa disciples and interfering with Fa-rectification over these years in a terribly evil way. So why, then, do the world's people need to state their stance? Because everybody [from Mainland China] has said things about following it. When people took an oath as they were inducted into the [Communist] Party, the [Communist Youth] League, or the [Communist Young] Pioneers, they all raised a fist and swore that for their entire lives they would struggle for the sake of evil Communism and that they would devote their lives to the malevolent party. The evil specter of the malevolent party is seizing on this and persecuting those people to the point of death. The evil specter asserts that those people made a pledge back then that they would give their lives to it, so it uses that to persecute people. Also, the malevolent party's factors still exist in the minds and bodies of those who don't see it clearly for what it is. So how could you not see it clearly for what it is? And after you do that, you have to eliminate it.

Of course, I wasn't very explicit about the matter of the evil party before, and that's because at the time I wanted to keep giving chances to sentient beings, including the evil-specter-possessed malevolent party. Another reason is that at the time, many, many external evil factors were taking part in interfering with Dafa and persecuting Dafa disciples, so with that great multitude of gigantic, diverse evil beings that were pressed into the Three Realms in front of us, the best approach was to concentrate on eliminating those. After they were eliminated, we needed to ferret out the one who had caused those awful demons to come here in the first place. Who initiated the persecution of Falun Gong in the world and has been playing a leading role all along? It was that evil party and that ludicrous wretch of the human race. That ludicrous evil ringleader was the head of that party, wasn't it? Driven by jealousy, it took the lead in doing evil against Dafa disciples in this world. That thing, which resulted from a low-level spirit reincarnating as a human being, is nothing on its own. Its jealousy was just right for the evil specter of the malevolent party to make use of. So that bad person and the evil specter became partners in crime. The bad person took the lead, while the evil specter of the malevolent party has been the real culprit which has attached itself to human bodies so as to persecute Dafa disciples. And all of the evil factors that have come down from beyond the Three Realms have been using the evil specter of the malevolent party to together persecute Dafa disciples, and in the persecution all evil has been involved in it. You know these things that I'm talking about. The Nine Commentaries has been published for quite a while now, and many students are very clear about this already.

The situation during Fa-rectification is bound to change constantly. Someone once asked me, "Master, what point should we have gotten to now?" And I said, "Just do what you should be doing at present." Fa-rectification in the cosmos won't change momentarily as we speak. (Audience laughs) When in Fa-rectification some sort of change needs to happen, a situation will definitely arise, but the emergence of the new situation will stir up certain attachments that arise from human thinking. Because it is humans cultivating, the attachments that are still there will have an effect. That is why an emotion that isn't right will arise inside some people, and they will even get foggyheaded and understand things as an ordinary person would. After the Nine Commentaries were published, at one point some students who didn't understand were talking about things like whether we were getting political. In fact, the bad people who persecute you could label anything you do as "getting political," and anything you do can get twisted around, because they are dead set on persecuting you, they're set on doing foul things to you. So they will use anything you say and turn it around to slander you, and no matter how good something you do is, they will say that you have done something bad. When you expose their persecution they will say that you are "getting involved in politics" and use that to rile people up and to try to justify their persecution. Don't let what those bad people say affect you. Ordinary people can't affect cultivators. Cultivators can't be affected by ordinary people. Having gone through all of this, you have indeed become more rational. I think that from now on none of the factors that want to interfere

with Dafa and disrupt the situation wherein Dafa disciples validate the Fa and save sentient beings will be able to make Dafa disciples waver. Recently, I basically haven't gotten involved in, and have said very little about, many of the things Dafa disciples are doing. That's because you all know now what you should do. Just do things according to how Fa-rectification progresses.

Each person has his or her own journey of validating the Fa. A lot of students have gotten together and established different media outlets, and a lot of students have found different ways to validate the Fa as well as different ways to clarify the truth and stop the persecution. It's fine to just go ahead and do those things. I know that you have done really well recently, and you are getting better and better. Master is truly pleased. Sometimes when I take a look on the Web, browse the newspapers, or watch the television programs, as I listen to and look at the things you are doing, I feel quite overcome. I rarely felt this way before. Now the situation is changing very fast, and Dafa disciples have matured. The righteousness that they have displayed is really extraordinary. The students who are clarifying the truth in Manhattan, in particular... in the frigid weather, under challenging circumstances, and when resources and money are very much lacking... those Dafa disciples have overcome all sorts of challenges and have been working to clarify the truth, save sentient beings, and validate the Fa. The firm resolve they have shown has shaken heaven and earth. All the gods have seen it. It's extraordinary, truly extraordinary. Of course, the same holds true in other settings. [For example,] there are those who have continued to clarify the truth and validate Dafa at the consulates and embassies or under different circumstances. No matter where they are, Dafa disciples glow with a shining light and are playing a role in validating the Fa.

I'll stop here. In the time that remains, if you want to ask about anything, let's do it the usual way (applause)—you can write down your question on a piece of paper and pass it up, and I will answer it for you. I will answer some questions [you have now] based on the current situation. If you have questions, you can pass up your slips of paper.

Question: Venerable Master, please spell out what "Holy King Who Turns the Wheel" is about. (Audience laughs, applauds)

Teacher: Our students who have read Shakyamuni's scriptures probably know that back when Shakyamuni taught the Fa, he talked about a "Holy Law-Wheel King," otherwise known as the "Holy King Who Turns the Wheel." The name Holy King Who Turns the Wheel has been used more often in the human world, whereas Holy Law-Wheel King is the title used in the heavens.

Buddha Shakyamuni once said that the Holy Law-Wheel King is the most omnipotent and powerful Tathagata in the universe. A Tathagata Buddha is a King of Law. The king of a Buddha's paradise is a Tathagata. We call it "Tathagata" based on ideas in cultivation and enlightenment. "Tathagata" means that the Buddha has come with the truth and the power to do what he wants. So the world's people call Kings of Law "Tathagatas," which is another correct way to understand it, since they [the Tathagatas] grasp the truths at that level, and among all of the beings in their respective domains they are the highest and grasp the highest truths of those levels. That's why they are Kings of Law, that is, kings of the beings at a given level or of that group of beings. There are many Kings of Law. Of course, to humans there are countless beings who are Tathagatas, one of whom is the Holy Law-Wheel King. Why did Buddha Shakyamuni name specifically the Holy Law-Wheel King? It was because the Holy Law-Wheel King was going to descend to the human world to teach the Fa and save people. Of course, you might have heard that Buddha Shakyamuni also said that Maitreya would descend to the human world and save people. Actually, "Maitreya" is a name, and "Holy King Who Turns the Wheel" is a title—the title of a king—which, if it's put in human terms, is, well, a job title. (Teacher laughs) (Applause)

As I have explained before, the gods at the levels close to the Three Realms need to be replaced after a certain period of time. The act of replacement brings about a problem, namely, that the sentient beings in lower realms are supposed to have a perpetual concept of gods, and yet if, say, one god leaves and people were not to know where he had gone, if nobody knew, then this kind of constant replacement could leave the sentient beings of the Three Realms in a state of disarray. The sentient beings of the low realms have emotion (qing), so they would be puzzled. The beings would think, “What happened to the god I believe in? Oh no, he’s gone. Then who is to look after me in his absence?” That’s the problem that would arise. So the god who takes over continues to look after the people who were going to be saved by the previous god. And because he replaces the previous god, he thus assumes the previous god’s title and even his image, all at the same time. Their images are not identical, but they are basically the same, they’re quite alike and similar. Fundamentally speaking, though, what is taken over is the god or Buddha’s title. Everyone is familiar with Bodhisattva Guanyin. Well, you know how many Bodhisattva Guanyins there have been? If they were all to sit together it would make for quite a crowd. Phew... it would probably take some time to count them all! And what about Buddha Shakyamuni—how many of him have there been? It is again a sizable number. Over the past twenty-five hundred years there have been as many as thousands of him. How many Buddha Amitabhas have there been? How many Jesuses have there been? How many Saint Marys have there been? How many Honorable Divine of the Origin have there been? They too would amount to large throngs with their numbers. And I’m not talking about things like their Law Bodies or when they replicate themselves. Because they are so close to the Three Realms—and when one is close to the Three Realms the emotion in the Three Realms, what the sentient beings in the Three Realms act out, and the factors that come from the many notions the worldly people have, are seen directly and are directly projected to where one is—these things will interfere with those gods. They are gods outside of the Three Realms and are different from the sentient beings inside the Three Realms, but still, when things carry on for long, it amounts to interference for them.

You know, I’ve told you a principle before: everything a person sees is infused into his brain. When he is infused with a lot of good things, he will be a good person. And if he is infused with a lot of bad things, he will be a bad person. When a Dafa disciple continually reads the books of Dafa, he is a being of upright Fa, and when he cultivates into a god he will be a King of Law. Gods observe from high places the behavior of sentient beings in the Three Realms. And though they are gods, they can be, over time, affected just the same. The beings in the Three Realms, though very different from gods, can still affect them. That’s why at a certain point in time the gods beyond the Three Realms need to be replaced. They have to leave, to go away. When they leave, the people down below who they were trying to save still call out to Jesus, Shakyamuni, Bodhisattva Guanyin, [or whoever it is]. Then what happens after that god leaves? Who will look after them? When a god leaves, he really stops handling all of the things he handled before. So before he leaves, he will save someone and bring the person up to replace him, give him the same Fa power, and have him cultivate an identical image, which is a divine body; they end up having the same image. Because the previous god had him cultivate the previous god’s image, he looks very similar to the previous god. But his own factors are incorporated as well, so there is a difference in how they look, though the similarities are strong. And their mighty virtue, grace, and divine powers are about the same. That is because the one who takes over has to reach that level before he can do so. It can’t be that your name is, say, John Doe, while his is Jack Smith, and when you get up there and someone asks you who you are, you say that you are John Doe and not Jack Smith. That wouldn’t work. You will have to be Bodhisattva Guanyin, you will have to be Jesus, you will have to be Buddha Shakyamuni, you will have to be Honorable Divine of the Origin, and so on. Your earthly name can no longer be used. So all of this is to say that after a certain length of time gods are replaced, though the divine position, the divine title, and the god’s mighty virtue aren’t

changed.

As for Buddha Maitreya, you know, in the human world there have been many who have managed to become Buddha Maitreya by cultivating. There was a “Cloth-Bag Monk,” for instance, who cultivated into Buddha Maitreya. When he was in the human world, he always had a cloth bag on him. When he was begging for alms he would put the food he received inside the bag and carry it on his back. Cloth-Bag Monk was often in the Hangzhou area. During the summer it gets pretty hot in the region south of the Yangtze River, so he often left his shirt unbuttoned, exposing his belly; and he was kind of chubby. So, ever since, Buddha Maitreya has been depicted that way in China’s Han region. [They made that association] because when he reached Parinirvana [and was about to depart the earth], he left a poem indicating that he was Maitreya, saying “Maitreya, Maitreya, the true Maitreya.” Monks and others back then didn’t understand what that was about. They thought that he was a reincarnation of Maitreya. They thought, “Oh, so Cloth-Bag Monk was actually a reincarnation of Maitreya.” But in fact, he wasn’t a reincarnation of Maitreya. He had cultivated into Maitreya. And it’s for the same reason that in Tibetan Buddhism monks are taught to cultivate toward a designated god. They aren’t clear on what the fundamental reason is. But that is in fact the purpose. Once the person completes his cultivation, he becomes the replacement of that previous god. But it has always been the assistant soul who was cultivating and doing the replacing.

Many persons throughout history have cultivated into Buddha Maitreya. Each was in fact chosen from a heavenly paradise and sent down to cultivate. Maitreya is the position of a Buddha, and the Fa-name of a Buddha. During Buddha Shakyamuni’s time, one of his disciples was going to cultivate into Maitreya, so Buddha Shakyamuni talked about how Buddha Maitreya would descend to the human world at the Time of Law’s End. But he wasn’t in fact talking about the Maitreya of that time. He was speaking of a Buddha title and how in the future a Buddha Maitreya would descend to the human world. In other words, since it was the title of a Buddha, who that succeeding god is was not something to reveal to the world’s people, and his original name no longer was important. But having arrived at this point today in history, sentient beings have learned that the Holy Law-Wheel King and Buddha Maitreya were to descend to the human world and so the exact relationship between the two becomes important. Just who really would be the Buddha Maitreya that comes this time becomes something sentient beings are concerned about. Before, human beings weren’t allowed to know about the succession of the Buddha titles, and even less could they know who really is the god who holds that position. But talking about it in the sphere of celestial beings, among Dafa disciples, is okay.

So in other words, the Maitreya that Buddha Shakyamuni spoke of is as a matter of fact the Buddha Maitreya who descends to the world to save people during the final time of the world, in man’s final days. In fact, some people in the human world did know—and it’s not limited to people of the East, as some in Western society knew as well—that the one who would really come is Maitreya. The god who holds that Buddha title is the only savior of the cosmos’s sentient beings, is the supreme King of Kings in the heavens, and saves the cosmos’s sentient beings under the title of Buddha Maitreya. So, given that he uses the title of Buddha Maitreya, who was he before he descended to the human world? He came from an even higher place, reincarnated at many different levels, and as he came down, level by level, he was different gods at various levels and he assumed the Fa titles of those levels as he passed through. And when he descended to the Fa Realm, he was the Holy Law-Wheel King, otherwise known as the Holy King Who Turns the Wheel. (Applause)

Under normal circumstances it is rare to have someone from a high level come down and directly replace a certain god. And it’s rare to have a god directly replace [another god] of the same level in the heavens. But it is normal to have gods created at the same level as one another. It’s not as if all the gods have to cultivate up there from down below. In other words, many [gods] are created in higher realms

in the normal course of things, and since the time of the Three Realms' creation the number of those who have been sent down and who then cultivated back up hasn't been small. That's why later on the practice of inheriting the title of a Buddha or a god became quite common. The Holy Law-Wheel King is the Maitreya who would descend during this period of time to save people. And "Maitreya" has become a Buddha's title. Shakyamuni said that the Maitreya who was among his disciples held the attainment status of Bodhisattva. So in people's minds, especially among [believers of] the religion, the idea formed that before Maitreya would descend to the human world he would hold the attainment status of "Bodhisattva," and that when he would descend to the human world and complete his task of saving people, he would validate the attainment status of Tathagata, that is, the attainment status of "Buddha." Buddha Shakyamuni was talking about a general principle that holds under normal circumstances, instead of the full story of Maitreya or the specifics of a particular Maitreya. In fact, though, the Holy Law-Wheel King was spoken of by Buddha Shakyamuni in great detail, he said much about him. As you know, the Buddhist scriptures were compiled some five hundred years after Buddha Shakyamuni had left the human world. So as later generations handed them down, they came to lose, little by little, much of what the Buddha had once said. When the Buddhist scriptures were composed, much of what was recorded was not Buddha Shakyamuni's original words. And on top of that, the scriptures couldn't fully capture the circumstances, the times, or the places of Buddha Shakyamuni's Fa-teachings or just what exactly he was referring to. So what was said about the Holy Law-Wheel King's descent to the human world wasn't recorded in full.

I'm not saying that the scriptures of Shakyamuni's Buddhism aren't good. In the past people could cultivate by his scriptures, and there were Buddhas looking after things. But because the human world is a vile world that's full of vice, the upper realms stipulated that any Fa to be bequeathed to the world's people couldn't be entirely true. That is why much of Buddha Shakyamuni's original words couldn't be recorded in his times. As humans would put it, it was "Heaven's will." As gods see it, it was what Fa-rectification dictated. Why was it that Jesus' original words were likewise compiled from memory by those who came later? Why did Lao Zi leave behind merely five thousand words after a lifetime of teaching the Dao? Exactly because true and complete scriptures couldn't be left to the vile world; higher gods had forbid true and complete scriptures from being left to man. Actually, true scriptures aren't left to man because, for one, human society is not a society of gods, and, the Three Realms is supposed to be a world where principles are reversed. Leaving true scriptures here would be an insult to the gods. Only the Fa Realm and the realms above it are worlds of gods and Buddhas that have true Fa and true scriptures. Another reason is, gods would never do something just for one purpose alone, and thus many, many factors are involved. They knew that the ultimate reason for the creation and existence of the Three Realms and the human race was for them to be used, at last, in the Fa-rectification. They didn't want the Fa they had taught to be left behind to man and interfere later on with the fundamental Great Fa of the cosmos that would be taught during the Fa-rectification at the end. That's the fundamental reason. When people later on recollected certain things and compiled scriptures it was a matter of people trying to do good and searching for god, and that's altogether different. (Applause)

Student asks: Does the requirement that you set forth in Zhuan Falun about not drinking alcohol hold for all beverages and food that contain alcohol? For example, having a beer as a beverage with your meal (audience laughs), having a bowl of fermented rice porridge for breakfast, or occasionally having a piece of chocolate with an alcoholic filling in our daily life (audience laughs). Do these things violate the rule against alcohol?

Teacher: If you really understand what cultivation is for, you will understand all of these things. But today's society has made a mess of everything. Even when you don't drink alcohol there are alcoholic things mixed in to the food we eat. So even when you haven't drunk any alcohol you still have alcohol

in your stomach. Now that society has become this way, to avoid it altogether you'd have to stop eating, wouldn't you? Also, in Western society there is the matter of custom: they (especially the French) have an alcoholic beverage with their meal, it's part of their diet. So when everyone is doing that and you don't, your family might think you are a bit weird. That is why back when I first imparted the Fa I said that if this is the situation, then for new students drinking a small glass of it isn't a big deal. In cultivation what matters is your heart and mind. But being a cultivator, if you want to be diligent, you will take cultivation very seriously. If a person can truly hold himself to a high standard, he will manage to do better with such things. But if instead he thinks these things don't matter, then he will be more lax with himself, and that's how you get differences.

While we're on this subject, I will talk a little about myself. You know, a few years back Master seldom stayed in one place for long. That was because amidst the persecution swarms of evil beings in other dimensions were searching everywhere for me. There were so many evil factors at the time that they saturated all of the Three Realms' dimensions. And they would have had people look for me so as to disrupt my focus on doing Fa-rectification and eliminating the evil things. That's why I kept moving about. At the time I was basically in a car around the clock, traveling daily. A line from a poem I wrote, which said, "Journeying thousands of miles by car," is in fact describing what it was like. With my constant movement, and with the protection of gods and powerful gong, things were kept invisible to the evil, and the evil couldn't locate me. Hardly anybody knew where I was. I wanted to swiftly eliminate the evil factors and speed up the progress of Fa-rectification, and I needed to prevent many matters of Fa-rectification from being disrupted. Along with this I was watching how our students were doing. This led to a problem with eating. Not everywhere I went had Chinese restaurants (everyone laughs), so a lot of times I had American, Japanese, Korean, or European food. All kinds of food are fine for me. But with many restaurants, when you go in there and just eat without ordering anything to drink, the owners get a bit upset (Teacher laughs), especially when there's a long line to be seated; a lot of restaurants make most of their profits from drinks. So I came up with a solution. There is non-alcoholic beer nowadays, and so I would order a non-alcoholic beer to get around that. Now with that said, I'm not telling you to follow my example.

Talking about this reminds me of something. In all these years there is one facet of Fa I haven't brought up with you. When the persecution was really intense, back in 2000, students in Mainland China were exposing the slanderous propaganda about Master that the evil had made up, and something said by one student has really stuck with me. And it is a view that needs to be corrected. The evil ringleader and the CCP made up lies and told our students how their teacher was so rich, how he had such-and-such luxury apartments in Beijing and Changchun, and how he led such an extravagant lifestyle. When I taught the Fa in China my lifestyle was in fact quite basic. Well, a student in Mainland China said, "Our Master is the best and he wouldn't be like that. If our Master were that way I wouldn't follow Him." I was saddened by that, and more than ever I understood the hardship and pains felt by the previous divine beings who had descended to the world to save people. Cultivation is about cultivating oneself—why look at others?

I have taught you cultivation, but that doesn't mean I am cultivating just as you are. If that were the case, and if we had become bad, then you'd just stop cultivating? Is that how it would work? Nothing in the Fa I've taught says that the Master must go through grueling cultivation just as cultivators do. The evil has assaulted me because I have been suffering on behalf of sentient beings. And when it's Dafa cultivation—where people don't leave the secular world to cultivate, and the disciples are from all walks of life—how could the Master be the same as all his disciples? And why would he have to live like those of his students who have the most karma or the most hardship? If it happens that your Master does things differently from you and you find it objectionable, then are you going to stop cultivating? Isn't [your notion that] the master who saves you must be like his disciples, the result of being

poisoned by the Party-culture of the CCP? Do human beings really want their master, who brings people salvation, to undergo human suffering along with them? And only then will they approve of him? In fact, what I want to establish and the problems that I intend to resolve during the Fa-rectification include no longer having divine beings who come down to save people be persecuted by the sentient beings in the Three Realms. Divine beings who save people come down to rescue them, so they can't be the same as human beings. In the past they went through the same ordeals that human beings experience, or suffered even worse than humans, for it was hard to save people, and those divine beings bore the karma of human beings. That was also to leave their own examples and to help people learn from them. They willfully went through that for the sake of human beings and to teach people how to live properly. So should divine beings, who don't have karma, have to suffer even a bit? It was human beings' karma weighing them down.

Divine beings who save people really can't be the same as those being saved. Say someone has fallen into a mud pit: would it make sense for him to refuse help if I offered to pull him out, and he insisted, "You have to jump in here and be like me before I'll let you save me"? There's no such thing. During this evil persecution, [think about] how many students who had such thinking fell after seeing, reading, or hearing the slanderous propaganda against Master. While teaching the Fa before, I discussed a principle. To illustrate the issue, one thing that they say in the CCP's Party-culture is, "Before you advise others to do well, you have to first do well yourself." So after some people have done something bad and others point it out to them, they say, "You haven't done well yourself. Don't tell me what to do. If you want to tell me what to do, you first have to do well yourself." Just like with the notion I mentioned above, their reasoning is deviant here. There is no such issue as a master who saves people not handling himself well. That is a crooked idea born of the malevolent Party's warped culture. In other words, the idea that a divine being, regardless of what approach he uses to save people, must be the same as human beings is absolutely not the case. Divine beings might choose, though, to teach people with words or by example, but that is an act of those divine beings being merciful, and absolutely not because they are supposed to do that. You must be clear on this. (Applause) While they walked the earth Shakyamuni and Jesus did suffer a lot for human beings. But the fact is, they didn't have to do that at all. That was caused by the enormous karma they bore for human beings and the fact that there were related things that couldn't be harmonized by the cosmos's past Fa. It entailed that they beg for alms among human beings and be mistreated and harmed by them, even to the extent that their entire lives were difficult. You all must be clear about this.

Going back to what I was saying before, if there is something alcoholic in your meal or in a piece of chocolate, that's not a big deal. But if you set a high standard for yourself you will do better in these situations. New students and students who haven't studied the Fa much won't be thought of as not doing well just because of these things. Gauge it for yourself. The Fa on this has been taught, and Master has taught you to conform to ordinary people as much as possible as you cultivate. As always, though, there are people who are set on being more diligent [than others] and have higher standards for themselves. That's what accounts for the differences [between people]. If you, as a Dafa cultivator, say that you just have to drink alcohol, then you have an attachment.

Question: The Fa's rectification of everything in the cosmos has reached its final stage and history is about to enter a new stage, but our gesture of salute to Master is still not uniform. (Audience laughs)

Teacher: You mean how you should greet Master? I've actually made clear since I first taught the Fa that people can address me in whatever way: you can call me by my name, call me Teacher, call me Master—whatever is fine. Master isn't a stickler for these things. But if you are a true Dafa disciple, you can't address me directly by my name. It doesn't matter if ordinary people call me by my name—they can call me whatever they want. But Dafa disciples should call me "Master," or "Teacher," etc. It's

up to you, and you can address me however you like. But be sure not to address me as “Buddha.” That’s because whatever the case, Master is teaching the Fa with a human body and saving you using a human form, he is manifesting in this world with a human body. A human body cannot be called a Buddha. Calling a human body Buddha blasphemes Buddhas. Some students might think, then: “I know in my heart who you are.” Well, that’s you knowing in your heart then (audience laughs, applauds), and it’s fine for you to call me whatever you want to in your heart. (Teacher laughs)

Question: Dafa disciples from Chengdu and Nanchong of Sichuan province send Master their highest regards and wish to pass on greetings to Master. Master, what should we do about those people in remote mountainous areas who have no access to information?

Teacher: Thank you, Dafa disciples from Nanchong. It’s not a problem. Let’s not forget that as for many things, aren’t there Master’s Law Bodies? And there are many gods who are playing a positive role helping out, too. What’s more, there are so many Dafa disciples in Mainland China, and they will do many things. Even if those people really can’t access the information, there are still ways to handle things. And if they are really getting left out, then there are ways to take care of that. But they actually won’t be left out. Did you know that after the Nine Commentaries came out, within just one month’s time all of China knew about them? Since they are for all people—and especially Chinese people—everybody will for sure be given an opportunity. (Applause) Some remote villages are pretty isolated, but gods are helping to spread them. And as they are spread, people will learn of them quickly, since at this most crucial time everyone must give their stance.

Question: For many people in Mainland China, especially the 60 million CCP members, coming to see clearly the evil Party’s wicked nature and completely break from it takes some time. Once the denunciation and removal of the malevolent Party begins, what will happen to those people who have been branded with the mark of the beast?

Teacher: When gods go about doing something they definitely take everything into consideration, and all will be given an equal chance. As you will see in the future, it will have been impossible for somebody to go without hearing about this [Dafa] during this Fa-rectification and at this time when Dafa is publicly spread. When the world’s people try to avoid being persecuted and say that they have never heard of Dafa, that’s just not true. Of course, this time around, where Dafa disciples cultivate as they validate the Fa, is different, and not everybody can become a Dafa disciple. But this is a major thing that involves sentient beings’ very existence; even the Three Realms’ existence is for the sake of Fa-rectification. If the salvation of all beings—something so significant—were not relayed to every single person on earth, if it weren’t relayed to the sentient beings when all was said and done, then I, he who administers the Fa-rectification, would definitely not let those responsible off the hook. (Applause) All people will know about it, not a single person will be left out. And then the choice is in their own hands, and that is the crucial thing. The entire Three Realms, the long, drawn-out years of history, and the sentient beings in the Three Realms were all created for this, so how could today’s people be left out? That’s impossible. I don’t think [what you described] should be a problem.

Question: Venerable Master, recently certain students have felt substances from other dimensions badly repressing them. Does that have to do with the state of Fa-rectification?

Teacher: Some students were coughing a while ago, and some students have had certain abnormal reactions, especially in the period after the Nine Commentaries came out. It was the work of the factors, lodged in people’s bodies, that belong to the malevolent Party’s evil specter. You need to eliminate them when you send righteous thoughts. They can’t have that much of an effect on Dafa disciples, but they do interfere. Basically all of the recent interference, including interference of other sorts, has been the work of those evil factors.

The evil factors that were pressing down into the Three Realms from beyond at the time of July 20, 1999, have been cleaned out to the point that basically few remain. Before the mighty force of Fa-rectification reaches this surface dimension, there will still be factors here which were created by the old forces before that, along with the factors of the malevolent Party's evil specter, doing evil. But since in this dimension there is gong that I left here earlier on, and there are some righteous gods, along with Dafa disciples and their righteous factors, they have now cleaned out the evil factors that persecute Dafa disciples to the point that not even one out of 100 million parts is left—a lot of the evil has been cleaned out. What remains in the surface dimension now is only eight or nine percent of what used to be here. (Applause) And the factors of the malevolent Party's evil specter are being destroyed on a large scale; and of late, especially, they have been cleaned out rapidly. They have been eliminated in the other dimensions where Fa-rectification has been completed. [What remains in] the surface dimension now doesn't even amount to one ten-thousandth of the total amount from before, and it only accounts for about seven percent of the surface dimension. The field that Dafa has established in this world occupies forty-five percent of what should be filled up in this dimension. If you look at the proportion, [you will see that] the factors left by the old forces in the surface dimension, the rotten demons, and the factors of the malevolent Party's evil specter altogether account for fifteen percent, while the field established by Dafa in this dimension occupies forty-five percent—and that doesn't even take into account the effect of Dafa disciples themselves. When I added up all of the evil factors that persecute Dafa disciples, they only amounted to fifteen percent. This says that during this time before the mighty force of Fa-rectification arrives at the surface, Dafa's factors occupy forty-five percent of the dimensional field at the surface, where human beings are, and that doesn't even include the Dafa disciples themselves.

Question: Please talk about how we should distinguish our cultivation from our work. A lot of our projects now face challenges in their management.

Teacher: If it's something that involves Dafa disciples working on validating the Fa, then that [process] in itself is cultivation. But you can't replace Fa-study with doing Dafa work—that wouldn't do. Haven't I said that you need to do all of the three things, and do them all well?

Outside of Mainland China some students have set up media outlets and other company-like entities that aim to validate the Fa, and they are managing them in the way ordinary companies are run. And there is nothing wrong with that, don't think that this is wrong. If something can't be run in a normal manner, then that might not be good for validating Dafa. Running a media outlet, starting a company, etc.—these are forms in human society. Human beings take a methodical approach to managing things, and Dafa disciples can learn from it, which you can't say is wrong. But for a certain period of time before the company is fully able to operate normally, there will be some challenges. Gradually you should arrive at the point where it really is run like a company, though, and that way it can more effectively play its role of directly or indirectly validating the Fa. So I think you should do your best to cooperate with others and coordinate things well. When something is beneficial to Dafa disciples' validation of the Fa, you should try your best to do it well.

Question: Some of my family members who don't cultivate cannot understand why the Nine Commentaries were published. This reflects shortcomings in my, your disciple's, cultivation in the past. How can I clear away this kind of interference?

Teacher: Even though your family members understood things before, it was at a shallow level. You didn't help them to really understand the truth.

Since the time when the Nine Commentaries came out, one thing that has happened is that [some students have] made declarations of withdrawal from the Party on behalf of their family members.

When a few of the family members refused, [the students would say,] “You can’t refuse! I’m going to represent you and withdraw you from the Party.” (Audience laughs) In fact, it really doesn’t count if they refuse. You may do it on others’ behalf, but they have to agree to it, and it doesn’t count if they do not consent to it. Even gods have to look at what a person chooses. This shows that many students haven’t done well, done enough, or had success in clarifying the truth to their families. Do you know what the biggest reason for that is? It’s that you see them as your family, rather than as part of the sentient beings or as just like all of the other independent lives. You should earnestly and carefully clarify the truth to your family members, just as you would with other people in the world. When you regard them as family members and don’t take it seriously, the results won’t be that good. Or, if you think, “He’s family, so I can represent him,” that won’t work. Even the formation of the Three Realms was done for the sake of today’s Fa-rectification, so people can’t be flippant about something as monumental as this. Is any life that simple? At the critical moment, is there any being who can be fully represented by someone else? Is there any being who can be denied the opportunity of choosing his own future? At the critical moment, all beings have to verify how they are. So if in your family you have this scenario [you described], then you need to carefully clarify the truth. You can do any ordinary things on your family members’ behalf, but when it comes to something that involves a being’s future—something that major—nobody can represent someone else. If you really want to save your family members, then clarify the truth to them as you would to other people. That’s because their knowing sides all realize, “In this life you are my family member, but in the next life who knows who we will be related to. Just in this lifetime is our relationship predestined.” It’s just like staying at an inn: you lodge there briefly for a night and then part ways the next day. Who could possibly take someone else’s place? That’s really how it is.

Question: How can we help the lawsuits in Africa against the evil people to move forward better? Right now there is constant interference. What’s the role, in Fa-rectification, of the lawsuit against Jiang in Africa?

Teacher: I affirm all of these things that you have done, and you have done a great job. I’d say you have done several brilliant things in Africa, which have shocked and frightened the evil and the bad people, helped the world’s people to see the nature of the evil, and had a good impact in saving sentient beings and with many other things. They are things that should be done, and you haven’t done them in vain. As for how to do things even better and how to move things forward, that is still up to you. And the extent to which you accomplish things depends on you as well. Actually, as far as each cultivator goes, you are all walking down the path that you need to take on your own. And you have done those things very well. Sometimes when I look at the things you have done, I really want to say “Bravo!”

Question: A relative of mine is a [Communist] Party member and lives in Mainland China. He doesn’t want to quit the Party. I have tried to persuade him many times but he refuses to listen. When the weeding-out takes place, will he lose his life? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: (Teacher laughs) Whether someone will be weeded out or not, or kept or not, these are things that belong to the next stage. Right now we should just think about saving people. Getting attached to [what will happen in] the future does no good, for when the Fa-rectification arrives here it has its standards [to judge by]. But one thing is for sure: no matter what we do, a large portion of people are no longer savable. Among them may be those who don’t want to listen to the truth, who refuse to listen when the truth is told, and who don’t want to read the Nine Commentaries. That is their choice. You have done what you should do. While being subjected to the most evil persecution, Dafa disciples are still saving sentient beings and overcoming all sorts of challenges in order to tell people about the truth. Yet some people don’t want to listen. And what’s more, Dafa disciples are saving people while being persecuted. Well, people’s unwillingness to listen to or read about [the truth] is also a way by which

people make their choice. If they don't want to be saved, then we have no option but to let them go with the malevolent Party.

Question: I didn't work before I started to cultivate and I haven't worked since. Since taking up cultivation I have had a good amount of leisure time to do things to spread the Fa. Is this in accordance with our cultivation way that conforms to ordinary society? Do I need to go out and look for a job now?

Teacher: If your family has no financial hardship or other burdens, then it's up to you whether or not you work, and it has nothing to do with being out of line with our cultivation way. I know that some students have borrowed a lot of money and yet they don't go out to work, saying that they're "too busy validating the Fa" to work. They can't pay off the money they have borrowed, and yet still they keep borrowing more. That is a problem. Have you thought about the principle of Fa that Master has taught about the obligation to pay off debts? If you, having taken up cultivation or reached Consummation, were to leave or consummate and become a god and yet have not paid off any of your debt, who would pay it off? Even if the debt is owed to a Dafa disciple, that's still unacceptable. Of course, when some students say, "I don't want it back. It's a gift to you," that is a different matter. That's a gift then, and it is a different concept than incurring a debt. You cannot go to extremes. You might be thinking, "Since validating the Fa will end soon anyhow, I won't need to pay back the money I owe you. When the time comes everything will be over and it'll all be wrapped up." (Audience laughs) How could it work that way? Is that thinking right? It is being irresponsible. Haven't I said that a Dafa disciple should be a good person in every circumstance? Most Dafa disciples are both working jobs and validating the Fa. Of course, if you don't need to work, have no financial challenges, and don't have to worry about affecting your family when you do things, then that's different. Everybody has family and societal obligations, and everybody is cultivating himself in the setting of human society and validating the Fa in the secular world. Why must you [who don't pay your debts] do something that diverges from the Fa's requirements? Of course, if those you owe say that they don't need the money, or if your family doesn't need you to work, then that's a different matter, and of course not a problem.

Question: Master, please spell out for us the deeper meaning of "Turning the Wheel Towards the Human World."

Teacher: "Turning the Wheel Towards the Human World"—so which wheel is it that's being turned? Of course it is the Law Wheel (Falun). (Applause) Isn't turning the Law Wheel towards the human world doing Fa-rectification towards the human world? That is what it means. (Applause)

Question: Since Master's scripture "Turning the Wheel Towards the Human World" was published, some disciples have thought that the scripture is for disciples to read, while others have thought it should be run in newspapers so that ordinary people could read it. I'm not sure how to handle this.

Teacher: It's okay to let ordinary people read it, too. Among ordinary people, there are some who are clued-in and who can understand it. But there are definitely many foggyheaded people who won't be able to understand it, so it might have a negative effect. That's how human society is now. So when it comes to specific things, discuss them among yourselves. It's just like with printing Master's photos in the newspaper: since Master said that you could do that, you did that, and it was no problem. But you can't print in flyers what I have written or what I have said and then distribute them. You need to do these things as rationally as possible. Being responsible to the Fa and to saving sentient beings is being responsible to yourself.

Question: In Western society there are some ordinary people, especially professors and scholars, who are heavily into studying evil Communism and evil Marxism. But these ordinary people are not members of the malevolent Party in China. Master, please tell us how we can help these ordinary

people.

Teacher: Show them the Nine Commentaries and ask them, “How does our study fare against yours?” (Applause) Right? We have come from that society and this is our study, which is born of first-hand experience. Let’s see who has researched it more thoroughly and astutely, and let’s hash it out. (Teacher laughs) (Applause)

Question: I obtained the Fa last May. Thank you, Master, for mercifully saving me. After I obtained the Fa I soon got involved in Dafa work, and sometimes I am so busy that I have simply no time to do the exercises. I’m very worried about this. Master, please tell us again how a new student can walk well the path of cultivating himself and validating the Fa.

Teacher: There’s no shortcut in cultivation for any student, and that holds for new students too. Just cultivate steadily and solidly, and do well the three things that Dafa disciples should do. Those things may appear ordinary, but all of your mighty virtue, and everything that Dafa disciples will consummate in the future, come from them. Don’t get anxious, and don’t do anything extreme. Just do things normally and rationally. That’s how you are supposed to cultivate. “Where there’s a will there’s a way.”

Question: How should Western students look at withdrawal from the Party? Have Western students who lived in Mainland China before been affected by the CCP’s evil specter?

Teacher: Some have, and some have not. When Westerners go to China many of them don’t necessarily become part of Chinese people’s circles, so most of them are not affected. But there are a very small number who have tried to make their way into the malevolent Party. As far as Dafa disciples are concerned, [the specter] won’t affect them, wherever they are.

Question: Greetings, Master! I have already quit the Party. But party dues are being automatically taken out of my salary. What should I do about that? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: Consider it robbery by the evil cult. (Audience laughs, applauds). It’s not a problem.

Question: Some students want to help withdraw their deceased relatives or family members from the Party. Is that necessary?

Teacher: That’s fine. There is no problem with that, for they have passed away and it’s not as if they can come over and ask the Epoch Times to publish their statements in print or online, right? (Audience laughs) (Applause) So yes, you can do that. And does it make any difference? Yes, it does! (Applause)

Question: Some overseas disciples use aliases when they quit the Party. Is that the same as quitting the Party using their real names, that is, in terms of their righteous beliefs, righteous thoughts, and righteous actions?

Teacher: It is the same. As I said earlier, using an alias is fine, for gods look at people’s hearts. But the formal act [of public renunciation] can inspire people in human society and is necessary for saving people.

Question: How should I apply my wisdom and use cinema or television media so that we can do better in making our way into mainstream society?

Teacher: If you have skills of that sort then go for it. Using those approaches to validate the Fa, expose the persecution, and save sentient beings is of course better. You can make your way into mainstream society as long as you solve one issue, which is, to truly be able to produce good work. But financial constraints should be taken into consideration as well. The same goes for the media entities. If they are truly run well, they will definitely manage to make their way into mainstream society and join the ranks of mainstream media. That would of course be great. I know that you have in fact been working hard

on many things and that you will do them well. I believe that with time that day will come, it definitely will. (Applause) I'll repeat what I said before: they will not only be run well, in the future they will definitely be the number one, primary media. (Applause) When the human race comes to understand all of this I don't think it will have much interest in anything else anymore, and being able to hear Dafa information and choosing a wonderful future for themselves will be what's first and foremost to them. (Applause)

Question: When products that are made in China are sold in the U.S., the money will flow to China and be used to persecute Falun Gong students. So I will no longer purchase a product that is made in China. Is my thinking right?

Teacher: Of course there's nothing wrong with that. Aren't many of our fellow students boycotting them, too? (Teacher laughs) But it appears that when only our students boycott them, the impact isn't that big. (Teacher laughs) And don't do that if it's going to bring you financial hardship. If you buy them owing to life's necessities, then it doesn't matter. But if all people in the world could realize what you've hit on, it would be terrifying to the evil.

Question: If an ordinary person has a positive attitude toward Dafa but doesn't yet have the right understanding of the evil Party and its evil specter, what will happen to him?

Teacher: Then it depends on his specific circumstances, since a person's attitude toward Dafa is first and foremost. But if he is dead set on supporting the evil Party and recognizing the evil Party, then he is in grave danger.

Question: Students in Mainland China would like to ask Master: Many ordinary people were at one point members of the [Communist] Little Red Guards and the [Communist] Youth League. Please tell us if they too need to still withdraw [from those organizations]?

Teacher: It's necessary to remove the mark left by the evil. Even though declaring withdrawal is a formality, if the person can come forward and make that statement, that is, if he is able to take that step, then his thinking is changing through that process and his body is cleansed of the poisonous factors. Some people have said, "I don't need to write it out. In my heart I have withdrawn." That might not really effect a cleansing of poisonous factors from the body. And gods are watching whether people are firm. Since the deeper motives behind a person's thoughts are complicated, his actions are the most accurate expression of himself.

Question: Many ordinary people are saying, "I stopped paying dues to the Party or the [Youth] League long ago. I stopped being a Party member long ago. I don't need to go through the formality of withdrawing from the Party." How should we look at this?

Teacher: It's still the same issue. The problem is not just with the formality of joining the Party. [The Party] has truly branded people with the mark of its evil cult and made people join its ranks. That mark must be erased. The mark doesn't manifest in the human world, and what is at work also includes the [Party's] factors that are inside people's bodies. People made deadly pledges to its blood-red flag, promising to give even their lives to it, so would you say that only thinking about it in your heart, instead of renouncing it openly, could do the job? Actually, now that we're on this subject, [I'll say that] this malevolent Party is truly evil to the utmost degree. It asks people to make deadly pledges to its blood-red flag, to dedicate their lives to the evil Party, and to dedicate their whole lives to doing its bidding. From ancient times to the present, not a single political party or human organization has been so sinister or brutal.

Question: Some Western students think that the tone of the Nine Commentaries makes them hard for Western society to accept. What should we be mindful of when we introduce the Nine Commentaries to

Western society?

Teacher: It's not like that. Doing it the way you have been is just fine. Don't emphasize those things. There are differences between the Eastern and Western ways of thinking, sure. But there are divine factors behind the Nine Commentaries, and they will have a positive impact on people, Asians and Westerners alike. In some people's cases, factors left by the old forces are preventing the person from getting involved in Dafa for the time being—they might be restraining him. It depends on the specific situation. Many Westerners haven't been harmed by the poison of the malevolent Party, and in those instances the person might come across as a bit indifferent. That's not a problem. As for the Nine Commentaries, at this time they are an important step in saving humankind. Perhaps, during the next stage, every single person on this earth will soon have to give his stance on whether he wants that evil Party around or not. Each person must choose his future. In countries that aren't ruled by the malevolent Party, Communist things are still, in reality, being practiced. Didn't a prophecy say that **** would rule the world?

Some people have said that the Nine Commentaries are too long and have asked whether they could be made more concise. The answer is no. During the last hundred or so years, the gangster-like Communist clique has been constantly at war with the free world, but nobody has been able to spell out what this malevolent Party really is. The Republic of China [Taiwan] has fought with the CCP for decades, and articles about the CCP have been written one after another. But they too haven't managed to really spell out what that malevolent Party is. We have managed to completely explain it, which is a first. How could it be made more concise? Should it be turned into a short, toothless article like what's been done before? Could such a piece take on the enormous responsibility [this one must] and fulfill the duty history has bestowed upon it? The goal of our fully explaining that malevolent Party is to expose its malevolent nature and help people to see it for what it is, thus saving the world's people. It is also done to help the world's people understand why it has persecuted Dafa disciples so wildly. We aren't "playing politics." And this isn't something politics could handle. In my heart is a great wish to save sentient beings. We needn't promise anything to the beings who have crooked thoughts. History will prove everything. I have given that malevolent Party many chances, and when its evilness peaked I warned it time and time again, saying, "I, Li Hongzhi, know and can explain everything." But the evil has gotten so wild that it has lost all reason. Even today it is still senselessly persecuting Dafa disciples. Let's see what is in store for it.

Question: Some ordinary people think that the Nine Commentaries are great, but they don't accept Dafa.

Teacher: A lot of the thoughts that ordinary people have result from their notions taking effect, and they say things without really thinking it over first. They often say things they don't really mean and say things that may mean something else. When that's the case, you need to help them come to their senses. What do you mean by "they don't accept Dafa"? That they don't want to learn it? If they won't learn it, that is fine. No one is forcing them to learn it. Only an evil cult would force somebody to learn its things, and it won't let people out even if they wish to leave. In Dafa, however, we don't go in for those things. If you want to learn it, go ahead. And if you don't want to, that's fine. What I tell people today is to make people aware of the truth: I want people to know what Dafa is and why the malevolent Party has persecuted it, and I do so in order to help people rid their minds of poisonous factors. As for whether people want to learn it, that's up to them. If they really don't approve of Dafa then they have chosen their future.

Question: Ever since the Nine Commentaries came out, I've been very into writing articles that expose the evil Party, but I have slacked off in my Fa-study. How should I balance things?

Teacher: That's not necessarily interference. You just need to find time to study the Fa. Study the Fa steadily and solidly, and don't just go through the motions. You have to do all of the three things. Writing articles is a part of your validating the Fa, but it can't take the place of the other two things.

Question: Some fellow practitioners in Mainland China think some Minghui editorials go against the spirit of Dafa. How can we win over those fellow cultivators in Mainland China?

Teacher: That's not a problem. When someone says there is a problem with Minghui, isn't that helpful for the Minghui Dafa disciples' cultivation? It can have a positive effect. If that happens they should just cultivate themselves more, and if they were wrong they should just correct themselves. If they weren't wrong, then they should hold firm and not be affected by those students who have human thoughts. Of course, it's not always the case that the students [who question Minghui] have human thoughts. It is possible that they know of better approaches to things. Overall, Minghui has grown only better with time, and it is on a proper course. The situation in Mainland China is complex, indeed. There are some students who, owing to their human thoughts, have very strong attachments, and the malevolent Party's factors are at work interfering. And then there are some bad people who pose as students. But that's no concern to us, as they can no longer interfere with Minghui.

Question: When Master was teaching Fa in the early days he said that the salvation of monks and nuns would take place last. So is clarifying the truth to them a lower priority?

Teacher: Right, the salvation of people in religions was planned for last, to be done in the next stage. Some people have said, "Why are Dafa disciples so special, even more so than those in religions? Why didn't you save the others first and have them become Dafa disciples, and instead you are saving these people right now and having them become Dafa disciples?" When human beings look at people they see only this one lifetime. But in fact, out of the people here today, many of them were, in history, the first group of disciples in the major, upright religions of the East and West—the people who heard in person Shakyamuni and Jesus teaching the Law. Dafa disciples are true believers with steadfast and upright faith. (Applause) The well-known saints, monks, Daoists, and Christians in history are right here among Dafa disciples. (Applause)

Question: Some Buddhists don't understand the story about Buddha Shakyamuni that Master tells in the seventh chapter of Zhuan Falun. They said that they looked through the entire Tripitaka but couldn't find it. That has affected their understanding of Dafa.

Teacher: Right. I can tell people about everything in the Fa. I can tell people about everything of all Buddhas and Gods in the heavens. And I can tell people about the past, present, and future of Buddha Shakyamuni. None of those things are in any scripture. And I can tell people about the cosmos's past, present, and future, and about all things and all beings. I can tell people about even the gods that Buddha Shakyamuni never mentioned, and about even how they came about and their entire histories. I can tell people about the greater Cosmos up to its greatest expanse, about what the different levels of the heavens are like—and of course the different levels of the heavens are gods, too—about how the cosmic bodies of different levels came about... about the fundamentals of anything and everything. And only I can tell people about these things. (Applause) What I can tell people includes everything of man's history in the Three Realms, from the minutiae to the biggest events in history. Could the Buddhist scriptures possibly record all of that? The scriptures didn't even record much of what Buddha Shakyamuni said while he walked the earth. Buddha Shakyamuni taught Fa for forty-nine years—did he teach merely what's in those few books? That's impossible, right? Human beings... they always hinder themselves with human notions. Don't worry about those things that ordinary people say. Who are the ones that are cultivating? Who are the people who are truly walking on a path toward godhood? Who are the people who can truly succeed at cultivation? In all of history, from the past on to the

present, only you have done this! (Applause)

As I have said before, the cultivation done in the past, the religions of the past, and the gods of the past who descended to this world to save people—did they truly save people? What they really did, in fact, was establish a culture for the Three Realms and mankind, which was to pave the way for the final Fa-rectification of the cosmos. And what's more, those being saved were people's assistant souls (fu yuanshen) instead of people's true selves. Still, the assistant souls who were being saved were designated beings that were sent down here. The reason was that after the Three Realms was created, some cosmic bodies were too close to the Three Realms, and gods close to the Three Realms saw and were even exposed to the Three Realms, so those gods were prone to being contaminated and thus fell. In the Three Realms there is emotion, the sentient beings' principles are reversed, the environment is harsh, and people have strong attachments. Upright gods, on the other hand, are compassionate, and they are prone to being interfered with by the sentient beings who are in the trying environment of the Three Realms. That is why the gods close to the Three Realms needed to be frequently replaced. In terms of human beings' time, they had to be replaced sometime within every ten-year span. That was the issue that arose. Meanwhile, the scenario came about wherein people made use of the form of this ordinary society in the Three Realms to go about laboriously cultivating themselves, and after they reached Consummation their assistant souls would replace the gods that needed to be replaced. Some beings from the paradises of gods above were sent down, and they were to cultivate in this world as people's assistant souls. And some actually reincarnated as other life forms, and after they achieved Consummation they would return and become the gods whom they were to replace. This scenario emerged only after the Three Realms came into existence. Before that there was no such thing as switching gods. This wasn't the goal of creating the Three Realms, though. It was a phenomenon that appeared after the Three Realms was created, and it was a way to resolve the fact that gods were interfered with. It was really for Fa-rectification that the Three Realms was created. During that earlier period, everything related to the Three Realms that the gods did, and everything that manifested in the world, was part of the process of establishing a culture for mankind and was to lay a foundation for people to understand the Fa later on.

It's easy for me to say these things today, and it's easy for you to hear, understand, and grasp them. Time, space, history, all things, heaven and earth, all beings, all happenings, cultivation, yin and yang, hardship and joy, man and gods—talking about these things is effortless for me. But did you know that every word's concept and meaning have played out over thousands of years of real, lived history and have evolved to be what they are today, and that over the course of history the words' meanings were built up and developed? I'm mainly talking about the Chinese language. All things and every happening that mankind understands can be covered, described, and expressed in human language and words. That's not something you can bring about just by inventing a language. There has to be something deeply ingrained, something that people have truly felt, experienced firsthand, and lived through—a process created for people that is grounded in real experience and that leaves a deep impression. Only then can people really understand the meaning conveyed by a character, word, or term. You can grasp the Fa taught today without even the slightest delay, but without that historical process it's possible you would have no idea what I'm talking about today.

What is "cultivation"? What does cultivation mean? How does a person cultivate? What does cultivation look like? What are cultivators like? It would be a problem if people didn't understand all of this. So the likes of Buddha Shakyamuni, Laozi, and Jesus had to descend to this world and all of these things had to be played out in lived reality so as to leave to mankind this culture, teach people what it means, and enable them to understand what it is. And what I'm talking about includes the process that cultivators underwent whereby their laborious cultivation and upright faith led to Consummation, along with similar things. Buddhas, Daos, and Gods left behind the improvement process of reaching one's

Attainment Status through upright faith and upright cultivation, and people have come to understand what these are. But with that said, all of that is still different from the form of cultivation that today's Disciples of Dafa practice. And that is why I say there is no model for Dafa disciples' cultivation—you have to blaze your own paths.

Question: In the process of trying to rescue the orphans and in clarifying the truth, the Rescue Team has found it to be a great means and process to further clarify the truth to all sectors of society, such as the governmental and financial sectors, for example. We also find it to be a process of trying to coordinate and work better with other truth-clarification teams. Master, please guide us as to how we can duplicate our efforts less and do better in utilizing the limited resources Dafa disciples currently have so as to do well rescuing the orphans.

Teacher: [A lot of] you are thinking about and planning how to do what you described. It's in progress. It is the right thing to do, and it should be done. Since these things involve many, many facets of society, including the U.S. government, they will have the effect you wish for only when you do them solidly. It's better if I don't get into the specifics of things, because you are the ones who need to handle the details. But this initiative has to be done. We can't not look after Dafa disciples' children—children who have lost their families. Those are my little disciples and your little fellow cultivators. As their master, I have been thinking about this all along. I have wanted to bring them to the mountain, gather them together, set up a school for them, and have them be raised together. (Applause)

Question: At present some students still think that when they are physically going through karma elimination and can't get out of bed it is the result of their own karma, and that because we have come to the final stage the karma has to be eliminated. Is that way of thinking correct?

Teacher: Not entirely. It happens because a person creates karma as long as he lives. When you cultivate, it is, among other things, a process of constantly eliminating your karma. As long as a person lives in this world he creates karma. So, during the course of your cultivation, karma is continually reduced and eliminated. But Dafa disciples are doing Fa-rectification cultivation, and so their karma is far less than that of ordinary people, and that kind of karma should no longer be hard for them to eliminate. Haven't I told you that these things have been arranged for you, the cultivators, each step of the way? So [your karma's elimination] has been arranged, step by step, right up through today. You do have as well a small amount of karma that is newly generated, but such things can play a positive role once Dafa disciples view and handle them correctly, and there isn't so much of them that they can interfere with Dafa disciples' validating of Fa. With the stage we are currently at, things of this sort have basically been reduced to a very minimal amount, for they aren't supposed to interfere with Dafa disciples' validating of Fa.

Why have there been some rather serious episodes, then? As I've told you, all kinds of evil factors take advantage of the gaps that Dafa disciples have when there are still attachments or are human thoughts that the disciples haven't detected yet. Currently the largest, most obvious type of interference is the work of the evil specter of the malevolent Party. Especially now, when other evil things have been eliminated to the point that few remain, what stands out is the work of the evil factors of the malevolent Party. The varieties of interference and persecution that take place today stem from this. So you need to recognize and address them seriously and eliminate them. Ordinary people don't believe that the malevolent Party has an evil specter and rotten demons to it, but Dafa disciples do believe so. It is the evil specter's field that enables the malevolent Party to have a footing in this world. In the one hundred years or so since the Paris Commune, the evil specter has formed a large field in the human dimension. The density of the field was quite high before. Even though the West is against the Party and its wicked doctrines, the West has, in reality, itself been practicing evil Communism of the malevolent Party's evil specter. The high taxation and high degree of social welfare now practiced in Western society are

exactly what the evil Party initially advocated. It's just that the evil Party has used violence to forcefully seize things from people, whereas in the West it is done via legislative means. In essence they are all practicing the stuff of evil Communism, rather than operating in the way a true human society should. Why has this phenomenon come about in spite of the fact that Western society opposes Communism's wicked doctrines? It is exactly because the evil factors in other dimensions are at work. In China, they are practicing evil Communism in form, while in substance they're a pack of gangsters and a cult rolled into one. In the West, they are against evil Communism in form, while in substance they are practicing it.

Question: Of late the Epoch Times has published many prophecies about the collapse of the evil Party. Master, would you please give us some guidance on this matter.

Teacher: Those were left to ordinary people for them to read, and it was done by gods from different levels who had come down to this world. Dafa disciples should just focus on walking their paths of validating the Fa.

Question: You talked about how the Milky Way would depart from the cosmos so as to purify the Three Realms. Does this mean that the Three Realms is the Milky Way and not the Solar System?

Teacher: Yes, I have said that before, haven't I? Well actually, the precise location of the Three Realms is not something that can be understood with human [concepts of] a fixed expanse. Seen with man's modern, matter-oriented views, the Solar System is the boundary of the Three Realms at this level. But, other components that the human eye can't see, components formed by different microcosmic particles, correspond to different, even broader dimensions. At the surface plane where human beings are, it corresponds to the Solar system; the expanse of a certain microcosmic plane corresponds to the Milky Way; and more microcosmic planes correspond to even larger expanses. The Three Realms is formed by a compound of numerous particles which range from microcosmic in size to larger ones. Different particles form different realms and different expanses. Actually, this is merely what can be expressed with human thought and human language. And this is only to describe the expanses that human eyes can see, that can be described, and that the different dimensions formed by particles correspond to. In fact, an even larger expanse of the Three Realms corresponds to the entire small universe. The "heaven and earth" that [the god] Pangu created, as myth has it, was actually this expanse. But it's not accurate to describe this expanse that way either, for [some of the things] within this boundary also correspond to realms whose inner components are outside of the Three Realms. Human language is limited, and teaching the Fa in keeping with human thought makes it impossible to articulate the Fa in terms that encompass ideas and thinking that involve all facets and principles of all levels. When the Milky Way departs from the rest of the cosmic body, it appears that this expanse is separated, and that you don't see the cosmic body anymore beyond the Milky Way; no matter how capable the human eye or human beings' telescopes are, they can't see it anymore. But actually, the situation varies in the different realms that form the Three Realms. The Fa is taught, though, to human beings who are in the process of cultivating. Difficult and complicated language could make it hard for many people to cultivate. Only when a person truly succeeds at cultivation and achieves Consummation can he see how the cosmos truly is. Earth and the Three Realms can only return [to their positions] after the period in which the Fa rectifies the human world and the full purification of the two has come to pass.

Question: I have found that when certain things that hadn't been done well are made up for later on, our overall Fa-rectification then proceeds much faster. So when disciples in certain regions don't do well, does it affect the overall progress of Fa-rectification?

Teacher: The progress of Fa-rectification isn't affected, but Dafa disciples' validation of the Fa can be, it can hamper things. The reason being, in those cases, other places are fully cleaned up while in that

place [that lags] the evil still has an effect, the persecution can't be ended, and the evil can't be cleared out. You know, nowadays people are sliding downhill faster and faster, and the morality of people today has declined horribly. If that didn't come to a stop, then human beings really couldn't be kept anymore, despite whatever one may wish.

Question: The Epoch Times is a media company that's meant for the public. Right now only a small number of students are involved in selling ads. Recently a coordinator in the [Falun Dafa] Association has been actively helping along these lines, but some students don't understand that. Master, please tell us how we can get more students involved.

Teacher: Yes, it's good that a coordinator wants to help with the Epoch Times work. A person who has a position of responsibility is actually a coordinator, and getting more capable people involved is what's key. How big of a role can any one individual play? Only when the group as a whole plays its role has the coordinator done well. When a coordinator does well himself, well, if you're the only one doing well, then you should just be an average student in that case. The key is that you have got to play the role of and fulfill the duties of a coordinator. And I'll mention another thing. The coordinators in all regions must abandon the approach of overseeing all things big and small. Each region should give free rein to the students in that locale and support them when they take the initiative to validate the Fa. Don't hold them back, unless it's those who often go to extremes. Veteran Dafa disciples have matured now, and they are walking their own paths towards Consummation. You need to be clear on this.

Question: Should students from Eastern Europe withdraw from the [Communist] Party and Youth League?

Teacher: Every person on this earth needs to give his stance on it, but right now [what you brought up] isn't most important. The malevolent Party in Eastern Europe has disintegrated, after all. If there are still people there who are staunch believers in and followers of that malevolent Party, then they too will be eliminated just like others. The CCP is the last major entity of the malevolent Party's evil specter, and to save the Chinese people [we need] to disintegrate the malevolent Party's evil specter.

Question: I think the Western students consider the Nine Commentaries to be our Chinese students' business. Could you please give us some guidance on this?

Teacher: It does mainly have to do with Chinese students. That's not a problem. But everyone in the world has to give his stance, and a lot of people even in the West don't see the malevolent CCP for what it is.

When people say that Falun Gong is remarkable, there are multiple meanings to it. One is, for over a hundred years there has been a nonstop battle between the world of the communist bloc and the free world, and it has been really intense; during the Cold War it seemed as though people were always under threat of nuclear war. But still, nobody managed to explain what the wicked Party is. Did anyone say it all? They were just hurling insults at each other. So many people and institutions were researching that malevolent Party, and yet nobody had it figured out. The Nationalist Party (KMT) has fought with the CCP for decades, and yet they have never been able to explain what the malevolent CCP is. Falun Gong, meanwhile, has managed to completely and clearly explain the malevolent Party. Isn't that extraordinary? Hasn't it led the world to see Falun Gong anew? Why do lots of people in ordinary society admire Dafa disciples? Ordinary people can't begin to explain many of mankind's affairs, yet Dafa disciples can spell them out, and that is extraordinary.

It's not just the West—all of mankind failed to see the wicked Party for what it is. Now what you urgently need to do is save those Chinese people who have been poisoned worst and help the Chinese people to clearly see the malevolent CCP for what it is. But many in the West, too, don't see the wicked

Party clearly, and a very small number even support that wicked Party. So aren't they in danger? It's only that right now what is urgent is to resolve the issue of so many people in China having been poisoned by it; that is why we haven't made those other, not-too-severely-poisoned nations the priority. In other regions [outside of Mainland China], as of now the number of people who have been poisoned is, after all, extremely small. Most people don't believe, and even disapprove of, what the malevolent Communist Party preaches. But the Chinese people are different. Having been educated for decades in the malevolent Party's culture, how many of the Chinese people can still see that malevolent Party for what it is? Before the Nine Commentaries came out, no Chinese person could clearly explain or recognize the malevolent Party. Even when they would bash it, they couldn't do so outside the confines of that culture which it engineered. They have been so deeply poisoned by it that they are no longer clearheaded. Even in their statements of withdrawal from the Party they use terms devised by the malevolent Party, such as, "I was born in the 'new' China," "I'm part of the generation that grew up under the red flag," "I have worked my whole life for 'the Party,'" and so on.

Question: Greetings to Master from the Bulgarian disciples. We are translating Zhuan Falun into Bulgarian. Could you please say a few words to guide us?

Teacher: *(Teacher smiles)* Being able to translate Dafa books well involves, in fact, a process of cultivating yourself. Don't fully use a cultivator's high-level understanding to do the translation, for each of your cultivation levels is different and everyone's understanding of the Fa of even the same sentence is different, and that is why you have debates that go unresolved. As long as the meanings of the words and sentences are in keeping with the surface meaning as held in human culture, it's fine. Since high-level meanings are something revealed by the Fa, the inner meanings can't be captured in translation. There are differences in how people think East and West, so during the initial stage of understanding the Fa it will be a little awkward. But if a person truly tries to learn it and read it, then that won't affect him, for gods are at work.

Question: Is the origin of evil Communism different from that of the malevolent Party?

Teacher: The evil Communism is simply something made up in order for the malevolent Party to deceive people. There is no difference really, they are the same thing. A member of the malevolent Party is an individual, and a bunch of Party members is a Party collective. The collective came up with an idea to fool people: they said that they would create a "kingdom of heaven on earth," which is the so-called, wicked Communism. How could the earth be turned into a kingdom of heaven? When gods created the Three Realms they did not by any means intend to turn it into a kingdom of heaven. Rather, it was meant to be used for Fa-rectification. *(Teacher laughs)* When in the future the Three Realms continues to exist, then the form of human society will forever be that of a human society, for that is what's needed by the cosmos. Turning it into a "kingdom of heaven"?? Heavenly kingdoms abound throughout the cosmos—they far outnumber human [worlds]. Anything beyond the surface dimension is a world of celestial gods, and heavenly kingdoms are everywhere in the cosmos.

Question: What was the massive tsunami in South Asia all about?

Teacher: Problems arise when mankind's karma reaches an enormous amount. But from a lot of things you can see that much of what unfolds today and implicates mankind is the doing of old-force factors, and those things do nothing positive for people. When something happens to mankind, it has to help it learn a positive lesson, and only then can it lead people to truly see that it was gods punishing people so as to save more persons. But when the punishment is just for the sake of punishing people, it only weakens people's belief in gods. Those things done by the old-force factors do nothing positive for mankind; when people grow bad they just weed them out. The tsunami's occurrence at this time was a warning to people—three hundred thousand people were gone within a matter of seconds. Back when

the big Tangshan Earthquake struck China, didn't hundreds of thousands perish in a flash? The CCP claims that it has a military that's millions strong. If they turn really wicked, perhaps all of them will be gone in an instant, too. (Teacher laughs) (Audience applauds) The old forces' factors don't care about human beings one bit. Only Dafa disciples are saving people.

Question: A number of veteran students in Mainland China are seizing the final opportunities to step forward and validate the Fa, and some used their real names when they withdrew from the Party. They asked us to pass on their greetings to our venerable Master. The Dafa disciples working in Mainland China's governmental offices send their greetings to revered Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. (Applause) The students who have been persecuted the most severely by the evil [have suffered like that] due to their attachments. And because of their attachments they have gone back and forth: they would write a "repentance statement" under pressure one day, then after they got out they would regret it and make a declaration [to nullify the repentance]; then on another day they would get arrested by the evil, their lack of righteous thoughts would lead to severe persecution, and then they would write yet another "repentance statement," and after they got out they would make yet another declaration. Those students are the ones who have been persecuted the worst. Some students, on the other hand, have very strong righteous thoughts and have truly done outstandingly. Since Minghui's reporting is mainly for the purpose of exposing the persecution, collecting the stories of those Dafa disciples who have done really well hasn't been made the priority. In reality many, many students have handled themselves well.

Question: How should a new student who took up Dafa just a few months ago divide his time between studying Zhuan Falun, Teacher's new writings, and the many older writings? We obtained the Fa during the Fa-rectification period, so I would like to be clear on what's more of a priority.

Teacher: New students should primarily study Zhuan Falun and read the other Dafa books as a supplement. When you have the time you can read writings from any period, including Essentials for Further Advancement. But don't think that time is tight and yet you still have to read everything. That's not the case. When new students are able to do what Dafa disciples should do, that is really outstanding. Reading Zhuan Falun is the most important. Read the others as a supplement. Read them when you have time, and when you don't, just read Zhuan Falun.

Question: Could you please talk about the importance of our performances?

Teacher: You put a lot of hard work into devising and preparing for the [Chinese] New Year's gala that you put on. The program was done well, but it was of course over after just one show and it really felt kind of hard to leave it at that. And besides, it can have a great, positive impact, so why not bring it to more people? You could tour a few major cities and perform from place to place so that more people could see it. Wouldn't that be great? But you'd have to keep one thing in mind: this can only be done by those who have the means and circumstances to do it; nobody can go to extremes, and nobody should disrupt the form that his own cultivation should take or his circumstances. I said "those who have the means and circumstances to do it," so those who don't cannot [do the touring]. You can't quit school or take an extended leave from school for it. Or if someone doesn't have the financial means and yet quits his job to be a performer [on the tour], that won't do, either. Besides, it's only needed around New Year's time, so the duration won't be long. Don't stop going to school or quit your job. Don't go to extremes. Doing so would bring about a lot of trouble.

Question: When the Fa rectifies the human world, the CCP will completely disintegrate in the human world, a great plague will spread, society will be in chaos, and so on. Which of these factors will be the most important?

Teacher: There won't be any chaos, will there? Human society is controlled by gods. When gods want chaos in human society, a lack of chaos isn't an option. And when gods want it to be stable, it has no choice but to be stable, right? And then there's the fact that something so major has been arranged for Fa-rectification, so how could things not be under control?

Question: I would like to organize a new project among the disciples who are teachers in the Taiwan area that involves putting together a series of Chinese textbooks for the first through twelfth grades. Since this project would involve a lot of work, I wonder if it would affect other, more important, Fa-validating work?

Teacher: If it has to do with validating the Fa, then go ahead. If it has nothing to do with validating the Fa, then you can't take up [Dafa] students' energy. It's also okay if it will help to restore mankind's moral values. Then you can give it a try.

Question: Some students are businesspeople but their goods come from Mainland China. Should they do that kind of business?

Teacher: That little bit of business you do is negligible when there are those international financial syndicates out there that keep providing life support [to the CCP]. Our students need to make a living, validate the Fa, and have conditions for validating the Fa, so that doesn't amount to a big issue for us. And besides, if those big financial syndicates were to stop what they are doing, that little bit of business you provide couldn't revive the CCP anyway. Also, with anything Dafa disciples do, elements of Dafa disciples' validating the Fa are involved.

Question: In Mainland China, after some people withdrew from the Party using aliases, the CCP decided to reinforce the study of Party ideology and required Party members to study it and take notes. If those who have withdrawn from the Party with aliases are forced to participate in those study sessions, will they again be marked by the beast?

Teacher: Once someone withdraws, that's it. He understands things deep down inside. And once he declares his withdrawal, there will be certain beings looking after him. (Applause)

Question: There are disciples who work as card dealers in casinos. Does that increase their karma? Should they not take that kind of job?

Teacher: A job is a job. Now that human society has come to be what it is, if you say that the job in the casino is bad, well, which of society's jobs are in fact true human jobs these days? With society how it is today, everything is changing along with the shifts of society. So that job is just a job. If there are other jobs available then you can try to switch to one of those. If there aren't, then just go ahead and do the one you have, since that's how society is now.

While we're on this topic I'll bring up another thing. Often when Westerners go to casinos they are there in fact for fun and recreation. But with Chinese people, and Asians from some other countries, they go there to really gamble, and they even gamble a lot of money. Their reasons for going are different.

Question: You said that Dafa disciples can't achieve Consummation while in debt, but I bought a house with a mortgage of \$50,000, and it will take thirty years to pay off. (Audience laughs) How should I handle this?

Teacher: Nothing among human beings is by chance. If you have a loan from the bank and it is going to take you decades to pay it off, yet Dafa disciples all need to reach Consummation, then you can't wait for decades, right? So how will these things be handled? Well, these things involve mankind's next stage. And in that case, during mankind's next stage the setup of human society and how society is will

change. Also, when Dafa disciples are really about to reach Consummation, Master will need to resolve and take care of everything for you. Actually, at that time you will yourself have the ability to handle such things. (Applause) This is a different matter from what I discussed earlier, as this is something that happens in the normal course of a person's life. [The problem is when] some students are thinking, "I can borrow money without paying it back. I'll just leave and that will be the end of it." (Audience laughs) That starting point doesn't work. You can't have the wrong motive.

Question: (Translated question) I have practiced for a year and a half now, and I have benefited greatly and in many ways. I thank you from the bottom of my heart.

Teacher: Those things are all things that you have validated and enlightened to. Master is just helping you along. If you can steadfastly make it to the end and not be swayed, and if despite the different forms of interference you encounter, you can truly, steadfastly keep going, then you don't need to thank me—all of the cosmos's gods will admire you! (Applause)

Question: Dafa disciples from twenty-one countries and six regions—Shandong, Changsha City in Hunan Province, Hengyang, Foshan City in Guangdong Province, Heyuan, Guangzhou, Maoming, the City of Zhongshan, Dongwan, Shenzhen, Hainan, Shanxi, Chengdu, Luzhou, Guiyang, Jiamusi, Fushun, Taiyuan, Anshan, Beijing, Beijing's Fengtai district and Chongwen district, Beijing University, Qinghua University, Tangshan, Shijiazhuang, Chengde, Tianjin, Zhanjiang, Dalian, Yantai, Benxi, Qinhuangdao, Shanghai, Kunming, Xinjiang, Fuzhou, Hubei, Hunan, Hefei, Harbin, Kaian, Shanxi, Nanjing, Liaoning, Inner Mongolia, Hohhot (audience laughs), Holland, Japan, New Zealand, France, Germany, Indonesia, Singapore, England, Australia, Denmark, Nepal, Taiwan, Macau, Sweden, Toronto, San Francisco in California, Auckland, San Jose, Cupertino, Malaysia, Argentina, Hong Kong, India, Turkey, the Caribbean, Vietnam—send their greetings to venerable Master!

Teacher: Thank you all. (Enthusiastic applause)

I have answered all of the questions. No matter how much I say, you still have to walk the path of cultivation yourselves. To walk this path well and progress to its end—nothing is more extraordinary. I say that because during the journey you will have hardships, tests of every sort, unforeseen ordeals, and you will have unexpected interference from all kinds of attachments and emotion. The interference will come from family, society, good friends, and even fellow cultivators. And along with this there is interference from changes in the state of human society and from human notions that were formed in society. All of those things can drag you back to being like an ordinary person. But if you can break through all of it, you can advance towards godhood. So as a cultivator, what is truly remarkable is when you can be steadfast and have righteous thoughts so firm that nothing can sway you. Be solid and firm like diamond, or granite, and then nothing can affect you—evil will be afraid at the mere sight of you. If upon encountering trying circumstances your thinking can be truly righteous, then, when faced with the evil's persecution and when faced with interference, just one sentence of yours fortified with steadfast righteous thoughts can instantly make the evil disintegrate (applause), and it will make those who are being used by the evil turn and flee, it will make the evil's persecution of you dissolve, and it will make the evil's interfering with you disappear without a trace. One thought born of righteous faith is all it takes. And whoever can hold firm that righteous thought and go the distance will become a magnificent god forged by Dafa. (Long applause)

I look forward to hearing more good things from you. (Enthusiastic applause)

Li Hongzhi

February 26, 2005

Teaching the Fa at the 2005 Manhattan International Fa Conference

(Enthusiastic applause)

Good afternoon, everyone! (Enthusiastic applause) (Audience: Good afternoon, Master!)

You've been working hard! (Applause) As Dafa disciples you have been through trials and tribulations, and you have been tempered and become more and more mature. The same holds true whether you are Dafa disciples in Mainland China or Dafa disciples outside the Mainland—you are becoming increasingly rational, increasingly clearheaded, and increasingly aware of how you should walk your paths. Now, when you are confronted with persecution, and confronted with all sorts of negative opinions, you can handle it rationally. And when you clarify the facts, you do that out of a desire to save sentient beings, so you have a great impact.

The current situation shows that now, and especially since the publication of the Nine Commentaries, many of the world's people have woken up. The Chinese people, more than others, have been kept in the dark for too long by the Party culture's false appearances that were created by the evil Communist ideology. People are gradually becoming clearheaded and their own, true natures are reviving. Since the publication of the Nine Commentaries, you have experienced a great many things, things of all kinds—both positive and negative. Most notably, on a daily basis thousands of people have been withdrawing from the Party, and this has terrified the malevolent Party's evil specter and the bad people. Now, before its imminent collapse, the evil is once again saying—as it riles people up, confuses and poisons people, and makes up lies—that we are doing political things. Even though you really aren't doing political things it insists that you are. Whenever they have persecuted and attacked people, they have always made up lies, riled people up, and attempted to justify their persecution. And when they attack somebody they always call the person whatever names they feel like calling him. Dafa disciples just do the things that Dafa disciples are supposed to do. They are clearheaded and rational, and they know what they are doing, and none of the evil lies or the accusations that stem from the Party culture can interfere with or jar them.

When it comes to cultivators, no ordinary people's approaches, ploys, persecution, incitement, or confusion and poisoning can affect them, and even less do those things work on Dafa disciples. The persecution has been going on for so long now, and yet what's laughable is that those rogues, rogue spies, and ringleaders of the rogue gang who have had a hand in persecuting Dafa disciples still haven't managed to see who Dafa disciples are, they still don't know what these cultivators are really about, and they still try to use those ordinary human approaches on them. Isn't that laughable? Indeed, it's true that when ordinary people look at the surface things, when they look at things with ordinary people's thinking, and especially when they look at things with the Party culture's warped logic and notions, they can't understand the realm or state of mind of a cultivator. When they look with ordinary human thoughts, nothing matches up; none of the approaches that the bad people have used in the persecution have worked. So never will any attempt by those at this human level to affect levels and realms higher than the human world meet with success.

Since the publication of the Nine Commentaries, many ordinary people who have been influenced by the lies of the malevolent Party's evil specter have been saying that we are getting political. But as you all know, we haven't "gotten political." Even if people who are being persecuted do get political, that's not something to be ashamed of; it's only logical and natural. But none of what we have done has a political motive behind it; we don't do things with political motives. How could true cultivators possibly get involved with worldly politics? Fa-rectification is taking place in the cosmos, and right now cultivators of Dafa are validating the Fa and their goal is to save sentient beings. During the Fa-rectification period, for the purpose of validating the Fa Dafa disciples can make use of any form in

ordinary society that is favorable for the Fa-rectification, but even then they only use things selectively based on what is needed to save sentient beings. [That is all right] because everything in the Three Realms was formed for the Fa-rectification. When you see sentient beings who need to be saved, what's crucial is getting the beings saved. When we use these things of the human world, it is done only after carefully considering what sentient beings can understand and what can help them be saved. The formation of the Three Realms was for today's Fa-rectification, and all of the myriad things and sentient beings in the Three Realms came for the Fa-rectification, were created for the Fa-rectification, and were formed for the Fa-rectification. In other words, all of the sentient beings and the myriad things came here for this. And every event here has been established, created, and formed for the Fa-rectification. So during this Fa-rectification Dafa disciples can use at will any method that makes it easier to save sentient beings, so long as it's something the world's people can understand and can thus be saved through. All the same, we have been using things selectively and in a good and upright way.

Let's take the Nine Commentaries as an example. The primary goal of publishing the Nine Commentaries was to expose the CCP nature so that people who had been deceived by the CCP could see it for what it is and recognize the CCP's evilness, and thus be saved. It was [done] because when Dafa disciples were clarifying the truth, a lot of people refused to listen, for they were under the influence of the malevolent Party's evil specter and the Party culture's propaganda that was utilized by the CCP's bad people. A lot of people would abruptly say, "If the Party says you are bad, you're bad." And a lot of people whose thinking was warped by the Party's culture would say, "If I were in that position I too would have suppressed it, like the CCP has." In addition, many people are still deceived and they believe very much in what is said by the CCP-controlled propaganda machine; they even still believe the CCP's rogue regime and still take its wicked doctrines as truth. With that situation before us, what should we do? Can we just cease to be compassionate? Can we not save those people, then? We of course have to save them. As I have always said, none of today's Chinese people are simple or ordinary. Don't be fooled by the fact that the human skin looks the same—the person that's in charge of it is actually no longer who it used to be, and in most cases beings that descended from high levels are in charge. And a great many kings from different nations throughout history reincarnated in China. So the group of people in China today is far from ordinary. It's just that when a person reincarnates or a divine being comes down to this world he enters the delusion, and people in delusion are susceptible to being used. But they were all meant to obtain the Fa and be saved, and they have great predestined connections.

With many beings, if they come to the Three Realms they have no way to get back to where they came from. No being in history who came here to assume human form has made it back. And in no past case where people successfully cultivated into gods or Buddhas was it that person himself who truly succeeded. It was always the person's assistant soul that used the person's main body to cultivate, whereas the person's true, master soul—the very person himself—never cultivated to success. In the cases of those who cultivated well, after a lifetime of cultivating someone in their image did indeed cultivate to success, but that was the assistant soul, whereas the master soul—or, that person—had to reenter the cycle of rebirth. In other words, think about why so many high-level beings dared to take such a perilous risk and come to the Three Realms. They are gods, so how could we not save them? Didn't they come to obtain the Fa? If you look at it from another perspective, wasn't their bravery in coming here a way of validating the Fa-rectification and placing their hope in the Fa-rectification? That's why I have said that we cannot leave them behind, and that we must save them and think of ways to save them! Even though they may be confused at the moment, or they may have lost their capacity to recognize truth or reality, owing to their concepts being warped by the Party culture over time, we still have to find ways to save them.

Right now the biggest obstacle is that the Party culture is influencing sentient beings and rendering

them unable to see or listen to the truth. With that situation at hand, the Nine Commentaries were published with the purpose of helping people to see the CCP's fundamental nature. After seeing its evil nature clearly and learning that the malevolent Party has corrupted our culture, a lot of people have stopped saying that they believe in the Party, and a lot of people have stopped believing in that rogue government. Our goal and starting point are not political in nature, and we don't want ordinary people's political power. We are saving people! If the CCP, while in its death throes, still tries to use different tactics to tamper with the salvation of sentient beings, then we have other ways to deal with it—the Buddha Fa is boundless! (Enthusiastic applause)

This Fa-rectification set out to save all beings. Whether a being was good or bad, or however big the mistakes he had made in the course of history, none of that would be held against him. When the entire cosmos has gone bad, in some cases you know certain beings have done wrong, and in some cases you don't, so what point is there in determining who is good and who isn't, or who is up to par and who isn't? So those things weren't going to be looked at, and everyone was to be saved. But there is one thing, which is the most crucial of all: the Fa-rectification of the cosmos cannot be interfered with. Then as for all of the beings in this entire cosmos, including the beings and people in the Three Realms, their attitudes today toward Dafa are of utmost importance. That was the only standard—we were going to look only at the beings' attitudes toward Dafa today. So in other words, the intention before wasn't to eliminate that malevolent CCP even though it had done every conceivable evil deed, created that wicked Party culture, and murdered countless people and other lives. That was because in Fa-rectification everything that is not upright could have been rectified, and things wouldn't have even needed cultivators to deal directly with them or fix them—those things would have been rectified at a fundamental level during the Fa-rectification. In other words, those matters wouldn't have been touched at the surface level at all. Even those evil specters of the malevolent Party could have been rectified and turned into good beings. But during this Fa-rectification, what was beneficial to society at the ordinary people's level [became persecuted]. During the years when Falun Gong was disseminated in Chinese society, it led to fundamental changes in many people's outlooks there, their moral standard improved and they became physically healthy. The CCP knows that its political power is illegitimate, so it has repeatedly barked about "stability" and desired to protect its political power. Of course, those are all ordinary people's affairs and we ignore what they do. But when Dafa was disseminated in China, wasn't that good for the people in that society? Didn't it effectively stabilize that society? When people wanted to do good, when all of them were fulfilling their responsibilities at work, and when all of them were acting as good people in every situation, that mental strength was turning into material strength, so think about how much economic benefit it would have brought to the country and its people, and how much good it would have done. It helped bring the populace's moral standards back up—think about how stable that society would have become. And who was governing that society, so who would have benefited from that? Wasn't that obvious? But that evil-specter-possessed malevolent Party and its gang of bad people, who were accustomed to doing evil at will and without restraint, nonetheless chose to persecute us. Then, well, since they chose persecution, from the day that they chose persecution the gods decided to have them weeded out. They will have to pay for everything they have done to the Disciples of Dafa during the persecution and for poisoning the world's people. But in fact their even greater sin is that they interfered with the Fa-rectification.

You know, in Fa-rectification a lot of the beings in other dimensions are being eliminated instantaneously as the Fa-rectification's mighty current passes through. It's done very quickly. No matter how fast the overall Fa-rectification pushes forward, though, it still requires a process. That's because the cosmos's dimensions consist of different times. Each planet has its own time, each particle has its own time, each area formed by particles has its own time, and each area formed by planets has its own time. The area of the nine major planets, the Milky Way, other galaxies, the entirety of all

galaxies, this universe, the universes beyond this universe, the universes of greater reaches... all of them have their own times. The times in each of these universes and cosmic bodies are different, and the differences are huge. Looking at it from the perspective of the entire cosmos, it seems that this Fa-rectification of the cosmos is completed as fast as a wave of the hand. But as that hand is waved, the time in certain dimensions is so fast that tens of thousands of years have passed. In some dimensions time elapses almost at the same rate as the wave of the hand. In some it takes hundreds of years or thousands of years. In this place of human beings it's really not so bad—it has been just over a dozen years since the Fa-rectification began. Of course, though, Master was working on this even before imparting the Fa. The fact is, it has progressed very swiftly. Those evil specters and bad people who have done evil to Dafa disciples are doing it only during this difference in time before the arrival here of Fa-rectification. The time it takes is in fact very brief. If mankind's time had been arranged to progress at the same rate as Fa-rectification, then this would have been over in the time it takes for a wave of the hand. It feels like time drags here at this human place, but it actually is moving really fast. Since Fa-rectification's speed has to be very fast, the speed at which it is pushing forward surpasses all times in the cosmos. The old forces in the cosmos are also operating quickly in order to interfere with Fa-rectification, and the time in the Three Realms has sped up in conjunction with that.

I've told you before that time here among human beings has become really fast. I have talked to you about that on several occasions, and [the pace of it] changed a number of times. At one point I said that one day now passes in what used to be the passage of a second, and later I told you that one year now passes in what used to be the passage of a minute. But even though the pace has been so fast, the beings in here can't detect it. And that is because the objects inside this place and all of this place's factors are, accordingly, going at a faster pace. Time and space have created different environments in the cosmos and different forms of dimensions. The beings and all things that are here are accelerating along with the time. That is why you can't feel it accelerating. Not only is the Fa-rectification pushing forward at a rapid pace, the old state of affairs is operating at an accelerating speed as well. With all that, the time now is very brief. The matter that makes up human beings has its limitations, so if time goes too fast, the sentient beings in the Three Realms won't be able to bear it. It has almost reached the limit now of what human beings can adapt to in terms of time. The only way human beings can detect time's acceleration and how it compares to before, is by a sense they might have based on their impressions. And older people know this even better: before, it felt like a person could do a lot in a day, one day felt long, and it seemed as though it would never get dark, whereas now dusk comes soon after dawn and it gets dark before you have done much. Another thing is, the capacity of the human body wouldn't keep up [if time were sped up too much]. The matter in each layer is subject to that layer's limitations, so the material elements wouldn't be able to keep up. The speed of Fa-rectification is, in fact, extremely rapid. No matter how rampant or ferocious those evil beings may seem, their terrible end is imminent! (Enthusiastic applause)

So since the publication of the Nine Commentaries, through clarifying the facts and saving sentient beings Dafa disciples have really helped many people come to understand the true situation. And notably, many people have wanted to withdraw from the Party and separate themselves from that evil thing. Let's consider it further. Some people might say, "I don't need to renounce the Party. I know that it's no good, and I stopped paying dues a long time ago." But this is not a case where you can just think about it and that will count. Back when you enthusiastically raised your fist and made a deadly pledge to that blood-red flag, you said that you would give your life to it, that you would devote your entire life to it. So if today you don't publicly declare your intentions and withdraw, how could it count? You think that just having had that thought in your mind counts? People's thoughts are unstable. A person's brain is just a processing center, and all kinds of messages and information go through the human brain, play out and display themselves, and affect that person. The origins of a person's thoughts are

extremely complex. So if you want to judge a person's attitude, what he does, and what kind of person he is, you have to go by his actions. His thoughts don't count. Why should we always go by a person's actions? If a person wants to do something bad, you can't charge him with a crime before he does it; only after he does it can you charge him. That's because the source of a person's thoughts and the thoughts themselves are extremely unstable. A person has a master soul and an assistant soul(s), he has all kinds of notions that have been formed after birth, and both good and evil are part of his nature. Also there are external factors that play a part. A person's actions are the true reflection of that person. So the way gods see it, the evil specter and the malevolent Party have already been incriminated because they have persecuted Dafa disciples and interfered with the Fa-rectification. They now consider them the most evil and have decided to eliminate them. How will they be eliminated, then? And who will be included in the elimination? Will it be enough just to eliminate the malevolent Party's evil specters? Members of the Party and the Youth League who have helped the malevolent Party's evil specter do bad things are doing its evil bidding in this world. Put another way, even if you haven't done anything bad, when you are one of its members you are a component that fortifies it, a particle of the evil, and thus a target for elimination. What's more, [the evil specter(s)] is having an effect on all of the dimensions in the Three Realms, especially the human world. A lot of people became part of it without being forced to and are willingly being used by it and helping it. That being the case, then isn't what CCP members have in store for them terrifying?

For a long time that malevolent Party with its evil specter has deliberately dragged into its ranks people who are accomplished, capable, and outstanding figures so as to strengthen itself, show that it is great, and make it look as if it really is made up of stellar individuals. The truth is, even the evil knows that those people aren't necessarily sincere, and that is why they are victimized whenever a [CCP] political movement comes along. When it's time to settle accounts with the malevolent Party, though, and when the Fa's rectification of the human world really takes place, none of that will be taken into consideration; as long as you are a member of it, everything will be instantly purged in the process. Because Dafa disciples are saving sentient beings, they have been informing people of the truth—even as they are being severely persecuted—by fully utilizing every opportunity and risking their own safety. They have told the world's people about these things and are saving them. Some people won't listen, though, and by refusing to listen, well, they have given their stance. Some people have read [the Commentaries] but still don't want to withdraw, in which case their not withdrawing has likewise given their stance.

Dafa disciples have been doing what they're doing out of compassion and a wish to save people, giving their best effort, and doing all they can to save people. So from day one to the present we have always been saving sentient beings and we have never done anything specifically to achieve some worldly political thing. We don't care about political power. A cultivator's goal is to go beyond the human world and achieve the Consummation of his being. When he is attached to getting worldly things or to self-interest he can't reach Consummation. When a cultivator cultivates in this world he is to get rid of all sorts of human attachments, and only then can he become a divine being. Otherwise, any attachment or any element in the human world that weighs on your mind becomes a lock that fastens you down and prevents you from leaving. That's why when you validate Dafa and save sentient beings you cultivate yourself at the same time. You're all very clear on that. In other words, we don't seek human things whatsoever.

Ordinary people—people who haven't obtained the Fa, people who don't know what Dafa disciples are about, and outsiders to cultivation—are incapable of understanding Dafa and Dafa disciples. In the minds of people today self-interest is number one. There are a lot of democracy activists and people from various non-governmental political groups who also oppose the malevolent CCP. But I find that it's hard for them to accomplish things. And some of their behavior is really poor, and troubling. If they

were really entrusted with political power there, would it work? They are so strongly attached to self-interest. Now, even before they have done much, when their self-interest is involved and at stake, they start fighting among themselves before moving on to do anything else. How could gods entrust them with responsibility over a nation? (Applause) So, human beings... they have reached this stage, and I'm not talking just about certain individuals... the state of the entire society and the morals in society are both going downhill fast. They are quickly going downhill without people realizing it, and people have become small-minded without realizing it. Their attachment to self-interest has surpassed their political aspirations, their political pursuits, and their desire to fight for their goals. What I'm saying is, moral values are important for ordinary people too. If someone's values are lacking gods really look down on him. With any person, any being, only when he has both aspirations and morals can he accomplish things, to be sure. When the Fa rectifies the human world, or, prior to that, when the malevolent CCP falls, who will govern [China]? We Dafa disciples won't govern it, for we are cultivators, people whose bodies are in the secular world but whose minds are beyond it. And we're not interested in political power there anyway. (Applause) Who will be fit, then? Gods will look for those who have great aspirations, who have the ability, and have high moral values. That you can count on! As for those everyday people who are able to validate Dafa today and who break away from the malevolent CCP—and I'm not talking about Dafa disciples—you are extraordinary, and my hope is that, if you truly want to accomplish some things in society, you will begin to place importance on refining your behavior. Only then will you be able to live up to a major responsibility like that.

What I was just talking about were peripheral things. With cultivators there is actually no need to talk about those things, but I did so because I know that in the audience today there are some new students as well as people who are not yet Dafa disciples. Whatever the case, I want what is good for people. Having reincarnated in China in this life, I, Li Hongzhi, have a deep understanding of that nation and I want what's good for it, too. (Applause) Since time is limited and you still have papers to present, I won't talk more. (Applause, asking Master to stay longer) If I say too much it will interfere with the current state of affairs wherein you validate the Fa, because students will ask a lot of questions that aren't related to the current situation of validating the Fa. If I said a lot today it would dilute the things that you need to do at present. So we should attend to the current circumstances and not dilute the things that now need to be done. That's basically how things are now. If there are new things that need to be done, Dafa disciples will naturally know.

I'd like to take this opportunity to tell you this: while saving sentient beings, don't forget to cultivate yourselves. (Applause) You need to do all of the three things. You should always keep your thoughts righteous, and when you are confronted with evil or with certain situations, you should send forth righteous thoughts a lot; you need to clarify the truth and save sentient beings, but even more so should you cultivate yourselves well. If you don't cultivate yourselves well you won't have mighty virtue, what you say will not be in line with the Fa, and then you can't possibly save sentient beings. When what you say has no mighty virtue and no power, it will have no effect, and the evil will capitalize on that. What's more, if you don't cultivate yourselves well and your righteous thoughts are lacking, when you handle certain things you will tend to slip into human ways of thinking, and then you won't be able to have the effect of saving sentient beings. A lot of ordinary people are helping Dafa disciples do things, as a matter of fact, but they are ordinary people doing the things of Dafa disciples. You, on the other hand, are Dafa disciples. What you are doing are things you are supposed to do, and you are establishing your mighty virtue and moving towards Consummation on a divine path. So it will not work if you don't cultivate yourselves. I won't say more on this. I won't take up more of your time. Study the Fa a lot, read the book a lot.

No matter how hard things may be for Dafa disciples and how trying your journey may be, your future is bright. More and more, you are seeing how bright your future is and are becoming clear about the

kind of path you want to take. Master has prepared the best of everything for you, but you need to make it there! (Warm applause)

Having gotten to where they are today, Dafa disciples have won the admiration of beings at all levels, high and low, and the evil beings are scared, terrified. Right now the evil beings are basically following, in an irrational way, the factors originally arranged by the old forces; they are being used and are doing things that interfere with the Fa-rectification. Some evil beings get up and flee the moment they are in proximity to Dafa disciples. Some tremble with fear, hesitant, while they do bad things now. So Dafa disciples should not be afraid, and they should handle everything in an upright and dignified way. It is the evil beings that are scared. At the beginning of the persecution Dafa disciples appeared to be isolated, and that was because there were so many evil factors at that time. But in reality they weren't isolated even then, as there were gods and Master's Law Bodies around, there was gong, and the side of you that had been fully cultivated was there. Things are even better today. Many of the evil factors are gone, the malevolent Party's evil specters are fewer, and the field Dafa has formed in the world has become enormous, with its density being very high now. The main thing the field is doing is helping Dafa disciples in saving sentient beings and in restraining the evil beings, particularly the major ones. So it basically leaves the mundane affairs of ordinary people alone. If this field were to produce a widespread effect, the effect would be quite significant and would far surpass the evil field of the wicked CCP. Meanwhile, the field of the evil-specter-ridden malevolent Party is dissolving and shrinking dramatically. So the evil beings are terrified.

In fact, [Dafa's] field not only helps Dafa disciples with what they are doing, it also encourages the world's people, builds up the courage of the Chinese people both inside and outside Mainland China, helps them to free themselves from the control of those evil factors, and has a positive effect on all fronts. So I hope you will do even better in the journey ahead, be upright and dignified, have stronger righteous thoughts, and do even better. No matter what situation you may encounter or in what circumstances you may find yourself, you have to be like a Dafa disciple and you can't act impulsively. You need to have enough righteous thoughts. (Applause)

The form and state of the cultivation that Dafa disciples practice today are different from the cultivation forms of the past. You are the ones who are truly saving sentient beings on a broad scale, and you are the ones who truly have such a great mission. That is why the state you manifest is completely different from that in the cultivation of the past. And for precisely these reasons, it is even more important that you not neglect your own cultivation or use these things to make excuses for your shortcomings. So I hope you will do well on the path ahead. Okay, I'll end here, that's all I will say today. (Long and enthusiastic applause)

Li Hongzhi

April 24, 2005 New York City

Teaching the Fa at the 2005 Canada Fa Conference

(Enthusiastic applause) Good morning! *(Applause)* *(Audience: “Good morning, Master!”)*

I remember that, before July 20, 1999, our Toronto Fa conference was held here. *(Enthusiastic applause)* At that time, when the evil CCP suppression and persecution were about to begin, I said something to you: I said that just by remaining unmoved you could handle all situations. *(Enthusiastic applause)* Of course, some students grasped what I said, while others took it to mean, don't do anything, don't take any action. *(Teacher laughs)* *(Everyone laughs)* Being “unmoved” refers to a person's steadfast righteous thoughts and righteous faith being unmoved. It wasn't about ignoring a Dafa disciple's responsibility of saving beings and not even taking the path of cultivating and improving yourselves through ordeals. How could that work? So however it was people did, it's cultivation, after all, so each person had a different understanding and each had taken up Dafa having differing degrees of human attachment; in the cultivation process there are human thoughts that are hard to remove, and this makes for different understandings and grasps of the Fa. So amidst this ordeal, different students' understandings of Dafa and the amounts of their attachments have been fully shown, and you have seen how differently people have acted during the persecution. This persecution was forced upon us and it is not to be acknowledged, but through the persecution shortcomings in cultivation have indeed been seen, just as the magnificent side of Dafa disciples has been seen. For you to have followed Master to this point and come through the persecution, that indeed *is* magnificent! *(Enthusiastic applause)*

I've said that if it were not for this persecution, Dafa disciples' cultivation would have taken another form. Of course, what's past is past, and it's basically a moot point now. But with things as they are, in these circumstances, it truly is magnificent when genuine Dafa disciples can really keep firm and improve themselves in the Fa, save sentient beings while negating the persecution, and make it to where they are today. You have seen how wicked, harsh, and underhanded the persecution has been, and on top of that, it has something that sets it apart from the persecutions of disciples of enlightened beings in the past: throughout history, persecutions were done out in the open, whereas today, the evil CCP has in its hands all the wicked experiences and filthy tactics from the persecutions of people in the course of history, so in this persecution and wicked suppression, many unspeakable tactics have been carried out on the sly. So when it comes to helping the world's people learn about this, helping society to become alarmed, having the world's people react in outrage at this persecution, or leading them to voice their support of Dafa disciples—this seems very hard to do. The reason is, the evil has been concealing the truth, and their persecutory tactics have been terribly wicked. Never before has something like this happened. It is the product of the wicked Communist Party having accumulated for over a century the most wicked of experiences, and they are covering up their criminal acts in the persecution in an extremely secretive way.

In other words, this ordeal that was forced upon Dafa disciples is without precedent in history. Back when the persecution first began, the [bad people] did things publicly, and they tried in vain to suppress Dafa disciples with a sinister, overwhelming atmosphere in which it felt as if the world was collapsing. But the evil forces, the rotten demons, and the malevolent Party couldn't succeed. Later on they realized that their approach would, as time went on, draw international attention and aggravate the Chinese people, and the broader public would support Dafa disciples and the effort to thwart the persecution. So they gradually made the persecution into a covert one. Then, for one thing, it looked on the surface like the malevolent CCP had again won a victory, and secondly, it painted a false picture where things seemed calm and harmonious on the surface. Meanwhile, behind the scenes it continued to underhandedly persecute Dafa disciples in a sinister fashion. In the latter stages it has gotten to the point that even the CCP's state-controlled radio stations, television stations, and newspapers no longer

mention it. But it has never let up in its means of oppressive persecution. These are the persecutory means of a gangster regime, the likes of which have never been seen before. You have seen that under these circumstances the mainstream media outlets of each country around the world have, for the most part, not reported on the persecution of Dafa disciples, keeping silent while crimes and sins are committed.

Of course, there is another factor, which is that China has now become an economic marketplace for the entire world, and many countries like the looks of the investment conditions there. It's not that the CCP has exceptional resources, or that the CCP has changed for the better and improved China's situation, or that the wicked Communist Party has some great approach, and thereby attracts investors from all over the world. In reality it's quite simple: the CCP has made the Chinese people poor and fearful, and so they want to save up more money; also, the Chinese people's work ethic has led them to work steadily and long term at their jobs. That has attracted investors. In many cultures, once people have made some money they stop working, and they won't work again until they have spent it. But the Chinese people, having been made poor and fearful by the CCP, have this characteristic that they want to keep saving up money, and so, as long as they can keep saving money they will keep working. That has attracted a great many investors who need a stable workforce, especially one of technical personnel. So the wicked CCP has seized upon this frame of mind that the Chinese have, and it has been using the Chinese people and using the investors' funds and massive amounts of financial, material, and human resources to suppress people and persecute Falun Gong. And so it is that many countries, out of economic interest, haven't given a stance on the persecution.

Through the persecution we've seen that nothing advocated for in human society is reliable. There are many people around the world who talk about human rights, and there are many countries that pay lip service to freedom of belief, to the point that seemingly everybody the world over takes these things to be life's most basic needs, a person's most crucial rights. But when the CCP persecutes the Chinese people and tramples on their human rights and freedom of belief in a terribly evil and severe way, many governments and media throughout the world have remained silent. In other words, when material gain is at stake, all of that talk about freedom of belief and human rights suddenly means nothing to them. As for people's consciences, well, we can see that in this circumstance people's so-called consciences likewise become nothing. It turns out such things are promoted just as a means to guard certain people's practical, vested interests. Dafa, on the other hand, is the real Truth of the cosmos that you have come to understand through cultivation. It is forever unchanging and immutable. Its upright teachings are to be upheld in all situations and circumstances; they are what people need to follow no matter the situation. In any circumstances, as long as the cultivator's righteous thoughts are strong, he can gain improvement, guidance, and assistance from it, thereby strengthening his righteous thoughts and helping him to ward off interference from whatever human tactics or evil temptations might come his way. This is the cosmos's Law and man's righteous belief in gods, and it is the manifestation of the Truth as cultivators progress in elevating themselves. Nothing that ordinary people tout for the purpose of guarding ordinary people's interests can compare to it. In other words, all of this transcends ordinary people, and that is why Dafa disciples can make it through the persecution.

Along with those two reasons, there is actually another factor at the most fundamental level that is behind the many governments and almost all the major media around the world not taking a stance. And that is, the old forces' factors in the old cosmos have been blocking off all of the world's people who haven't obtained the Fa, not letting them get involved in this affair. Their goal is to have the Dafa disciples be "tested" in certain locales. If the world's people did get involved, then the "tests" of Dafa disciples wouldn't be that wicked or reach the goal of determining, through the harsh, cruel "tribulations" that they designed for them, whether Dafa disciples are up to par. That's the ultimate reason why they have done this.

No matter what, though, throughout the persecution Dafa disciples and I have fully resisted the persecution. So while we completely resist this persecution, to follow your Master's requirements, my requirements, and maintain the unique cultivation state that you have, and to do well everything you are responsible for as a Dafa disciple—that is what it means to be diligent. I've told you before that, when it comes to cultivation, any cultivator in the past would, like you, have a tough cultivation predicament, one of grueling, long-term tests. And especially when a person cultivates with things that benefit him in practical ways right around him, that's truly hard. Many chances to gain are right there, tempting cultivators, and when you let down your guard just a little bit, your thinking, your understanding, and even your human thoughts will lead you to drift along with the current. So this form of cultivation is very hard. But because it's hard, seen from a different angle, it shows that the Dafa disciples today are able to cultivate to high levels. If the environment were not so trying, then the direct tests of the cultivator's human surface and of the main body of that person's being would not be so intense.

You know, whether it was religions or the various cultivation forms in history, they weren't responsible for the outermost surface of the person, the true figure, in the person's cultivation. In other words, it didn't matter to them whether the person's master soul (*zhu yuanshen*) could succeed in cultivation. That's why most of them involved cultivating for extended periods in a state of stillness (*ding*). The various states that manifest when attachments are removed in stillness can act only upon the cultivator's subordinate soul (*fu yuanshen*). But this form of practice, one in which Dafa disciples cultivate in human society, has the cultivators' remaining human attachments and the many temptations of self-interest for the person at the surface manifest in a most direct way. And this leads to an emphasis on the cultivation of the cultivator who is at the surface, thus making changes in the surface human side the key. This then becomes the most challenging point of emphasis in cultivation. On top of that, the premise is that the person's main body is the target of salvation and what is to be improved, so the true cultivation of the person becomes what is foremost, and the cultivation way is such that the surface of the person is tested directly. The tests of the subordinate soul and the other beings present in the human body are not so direct, for they are all breaking through the delusion to some extent, whereas the person [at the surface] is being directly tested by all the things that could benefit him in a practical way. That is what's unique about Dafa disciples' cultivation. And that is what I meant when I said, "Human beings can now truly cultivate into gods." I said that, "In form it is now truly the person himself who is cultivating," because the human body has become the primary body in the cultivation process.

Back when this Dafa was first taught, a lot of gods didn't understand, and therefore said, "You value humans too much." The implication was, "Instead of focusing on us, you are focusing on humans." Who ever took humans seriously in the past? Human beings have so many attachments, their conduct is so shoddy, and their reasoning is so muddled. "Why would you want to save humans?" they thought. Of course, there are many reasons involved that they didn't know about. I have shared with you in past teachings that low-level gods don't know the true state of things at mankind's surface level. Over the course of so many years, so much has happened in human history, and the surface human beings have endured tremendous amounts in their various incarnations. Fa-rectification is saving all lives, so how could those lives not be saved? When Dafa rectifies the Fa in the cosmos, things are carried out in a way different from in any cultivation form of the past, where [the cultivation form] would be responsible for only one particular type of being or the beings within only a certain range. Fa-rectification is to save all beings that can be saved, which includes all forms of life that are created by gods and are present in a person's main body. What's more, many people have undergone great hardships over the course of the long, drawn-out years, so how could they not be saved? Aren't humans the primary beings in the Three Realms? Don't all of the beings in the Three Realms need to be saved? Then this cultivation form as well as the foundation that the human race has laid and the suffering that it has gone through over the course of the long years of history—isn't it exactly these things that have

enabled human beings to gain the greatest mighty-virtue of all time? And shouldn't these beings be deemed the most outstanding and considered first for salvation? When this human place is made the base point of Fa-rectification, isn't it only fitting that the first priority be to set free this group of beings, human beings?

Of course, it's none too simple. Everything of today was foreseen in the past. Back when the Three Realms was first formed, arrangements began to be made, and then in the human form at man's outermost surface the beings and the conditions that would later be needed by the Fa-rectification period were gradually arranged, and this then allowed those beings to gain enormous mighty-virtue in the process of going through such long years. In other words, what is at a human being's surface is not just simply a human. [Human beings'] deficient conduct and wisdom are the result of limitations brought about by the realm human beings are in, the environment of the Three Realms, and the standard used when man was created. This can't be perceived merely in the manifestations of things, because the higher a factor's level is, the harder it is to detect it at the [level of the] human body's surface. With those things undetected, man's true situation has forever been veiled from the beings at the multitude of levels. It's not that every god knows the relationship between the Three Realms and the cosmos. As you know, over the course of history much culture and many prophecies were passed on to human society, but of the gods, even those closest to the Three Realms don't know about many such things. Isn't that curious? So why is that, then? Why don't they know? When human beings can comprehend certain upright teachings found in some of the philosophies of the past, as well as the highly accurate prophecies left here during the course of human history, how could gods *not* know?

There are actually many mysteries in the human world and in the Three Realms, and a lot of mysteries are unknown to gods. And there are great and numerous differences between the time of mankind and those of many, many gods. Supposing a human being is a particle, then, a divine being that is the size of a larger particle—speaking in terms of volume, that is—what he can detect, be aware of, and know regarding the long, drawn-out history of the human world is quite limited. When it comes to a particle whose volume is smaller than the human race's particles, or a god who is smaller than a molecular particle, his time passes by very fast. That is why many beings know nothing about the essential history of the Three Realms, the reason for the Three Realms' existence, or the true meaning of life's existence. A god doesn't really die, but he is reborn in his realm. I'll just use the word "rebirth" to describe it. He too starts over again owing to the [law of] formation-stasis-degeneration-destruction that has existed in the cosmos, similar to how human beings go through birth, aging, sickness, and death and then reincarnate. At the time of the cosmos's creation the principle of cyclical renewal was set in the Fa-truths, and so this phenomenon has similarly existed in the realms of gods. It's just that for gods, the time in their [respective realms] seems to be endless. Also, gods are aware of their own process of rebirth, unlike human beings, who find the idea of death terrifying and who are unsure whether there is an afterlife. These things are part of the delusion and not things that humans are allowed to know. But gods, in their divine state, do know them. It's just that when they are reborn their memory from before is erased—when they are reborn all memory of the past is gone. That's how they are. But to them, everything is so long that it's as if life never ends. In the process of rebirth they come to no longer know about things from the past. So over the long years not all gods in the cosmos know the history that has unfolded in the Three Realms. And even with today's Fa-rectification, not all gods know what it is about, nor even can all of them understand or see each step of Fa-rectification. The beings of the numerous realms see Fa-rectification only when it is almost right before them, they don't see it until it arrives. That's why the cosmos's beings have acted in different ways in this Fa-rectification. Some have a positive understanding, some have a negative one, and some have a passive one. That's how they are. All of the different ways we have seen human beings act in today's human societies, I can tell you, are fairly similar to how things are in the higher realms.

Before July 20, 1999, back when Dafa was being spread widely, in what kind of state were the beings and the gods of different realms? They were saying, “Wow, Dafa is so great. What a pity such a good Law is taught to humans, and done so when humans are at their worst.” Some of them thought, “Perhaps only by spreading it in a time like this can the magnificence of Dafa be shown.” There were also beings who thought, “Li Hongzhi is merciful, so let’s push all of the bad things onto him and have him work off the sins and karma.” They seized the opportunity to do bad things. The karma that was pressing down [on me] was as enormous as the sky, and many gods who saw it were thinking, “Will he still be able to take it?” Though they had different thoughts and understandings among them, the roles they played were largely positive at the time. But once the persecution began on July 20, 1999, their thinking changed. Great numbers of beings in diverse realms assumed a resigned, passive attitude and just watched things; they did nothing upon seeing the rotten demons do evil and carry out the persecution, as if they were watching to see if [I] would make it through. They thought, “If you can make it, then wow, that’s simply extraordinary and I will support you.” But, owing to the obstacles that arose after the old forces and old beings were roused, and upon seeing the world be filled with an evil, overpowering force, the beings each had selfish thoughts. The majority thought, “It will be really hard for this to succeed. If it doesn’t work I will be affected.” So they didn’t declare a stance. Almost all beings in the multitudinous realms were like that. What the Law of the cosmos intends to save is precisely the beings in the multitudinous realms. The requirements for the beings can’t be too high, though. If everyone were so upright the cosmos wouldn’t have needed Fa-rectification. Exactly because beings have become like this, where they are no longer good, they have acted as they have. And that is how the gods acted towards this Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples.

Of course, as the overall Fa-rectification continually pushes forward, the situation in the world and that of the entire Three Realms changes constantly. The actions you have seen by people today bear much resemblance to how things are in the heavens. Put differently, if the lives of many of the world’s people correspond to those of celestial bodies and have certain backgrounds, then think about it: doesn’t [how they act here] relate directly to how things are in higher realms at this time? Of course, humans at the outermost surface aren’t clear on things. Right now many people are willing to step forward, because a lot of the different realms’ beings and kings can see that Dafa’s success in Fa-rectification is unstoppable and certain. So one after another they are giving their stance and showing it in their actions. The final factors of the old cosmos saw the coming of this stage long ago. There are many still higher, final beings in the cosmos, and even though they are not related to the old forces’ factors, they are nonetheless old beings and are holding on to the concepts they formed after deviating. When they look at Dafa disciples they hold on to the deficiencies of the past cosmos and its warped characteristics, and they are trying to uphold all of those things. They think that this kind of persecution can help Dafa disciples cultivate. Their notions are having an obstructing effect, and they have created a partition between the surface world and other realms, hindering people’s understanding of the Fa. They think that only when somebody makes it through under these circumstances is it acceptable, and that the beings in the lower realms and the world’s people can be kept only if they give their stance under these circumstances. Making the choice under these circumstances does bespeak of a being’s magnificence, but is it necessary to have that state wherein they can’t comprehend the Fa-rectification? And most importantly, the future cosmos doesn’t want things done this way. And Fa-rectification doesn’t acknowledge these negative, antagonistic factors. Furthermore, it is a being’s attitude towards Fa-rectification at this time that is crucial, and this holds for those “final, highest” beings that try to influence Fa-rectification.

The Fa-rectification affects the futures of all lives, instead of only Dafa disciples, the world’s people, or beings from different realms. Given the Fa-rectification’s immensity, who could be left out? At the same time, because of the utmost importance of a being’s attitude towards Fa-rectification, nobody has

the right to seal off sentient beings and make them ignorantly commit sins against Fa-rectification and Dafa. Meddling from those factors of the old forces should never have happened in the first place. It is real only when the sentient beings are able to look at this affair and take a position without being controlled in any way and in the absence of interference from any factor. When that's not the case, isn't what they devised a manifestation of their arranging certain beings to do good and certain beings to do bad things based on *their* wishes? Is that the true behavior of those beings? It's not! But as the situation currently stands, the cosmos's old, final factors are still interfering with what is wanted and what needs to be established for the future.

Today the actions of the lives in this world that we witness are such that despite the old forces' influence, the beings and gods in different realms are gradually coming to approve of and support Dafa. This approval, however, isn't a true, unconditional acceptance of Dafa, Fa-rectification, and Dafa disciples, but instead the result of the great momentum of the Fa-rectification's success pervading the entire cosmic body, leaving them with no choice. Of course, there is a significant portion of them that do truly understand, for they can now see this trend of Fa-rectification and that everything for the future is sure to be achieved. Of course, the world's people aren't actually aware of all of this. They can see only that [Falun Gong] hasn't been cowed by the persecution from the gangster-led CCP government, and they have shown a human-level realization, "Wow, that Falun Gong is something. After all this time Falun Gong hasn't been scared into submission by that wicked, evil CCP. Instead it has increasingly flourished and thrived, while the CCP has destroyed itself in the process of persecuting Falun Gong. Falun Gong is incredible!" Also, for the Chinese people, the qualities arising out of the righteous thoughts displayed by Dafa disciples suggest that there is hope that the moral values of Chinese civilization will be restored. Those greedy, corrupt officials and the crimes being committed are raging out of control in that society ruled by the CCP. Another thing is, in order to allow the Chinese people to comprehend and obtain the Fa, the minds of the Chinese people were freed up when Fa-rectification first began, leading them to become very smart. However, during this persecution they haven't put those smarts to use in understanding the Fa, and have instead used it to commit crimes. So during the past few years of persecuting Dafa disciples, they have attacked *Zhen, Shan, Ren* and promoted wicked things, and this has made the ways in which sentient beings commit crimes become extremely covert and complex. The CCP's rogue gang has no way to deal with China's current predicament. They have simply no way to reverse the crimes they have committed and the complicated problems in society of their own making that they now face.

I said all of this just now because I'm sitting here again today teaching you Fa. (*Enthusiastic applause*) Five or six years have passed, and I am teaching the Fa here again today, and you might have a different feeling, and that might be even more so for those students who were here last time. We have basically made it through the wicked, cruel persecution, [and I can say that] since during this Fa-rectification the wicked CCP's factors are being drastically and rapidly destroyed in great numbers. Just like I said, they *are* wicked, malicious, and bad. As long as they exist they will keep doing bad things. So in China, even though the restraint on people there from the wicked Communist Party's evil factors is, as with many other people around the world, being eliminated, slowed down, and lessened, and it is no longer that effective really, the persecution against Dafa disciples is still being sustained. [That will continue] unless they are fully eliminated, and at that point the persecution will end. Those evil factors of the wicked CCP will definitely be cleared away by gods in the Fa-rectification! (*Enthusiastic applause*)

The wicked CCP itself can see that it is teetering on the edge and that all is lost. Many people want to leave themselves a way out, and many are trying to cover up the crimes they committed in the persecution. And of course, even more people want to withdraw from those wicked Party organizations. All of this throws those die-hards of the wicked Party into despair and terrifies them. Notably, the

withdrawals from the Party are making them tremble with fear. All is lost for them, and they can already see that it's over for them. No matter what kind of attitude ordinary people have [towards what's happening] or how they worry about what will happen to Chinese society and civilization, they are worrying in vain. Since ancient times gods have never loosened their grip on any nation or any individual. When gods want a society to fall into chaos, it will fall into chaos; when gods want a person to go on a rampage, he will go on a rampage; and when gods want a society to be stable, it will be stable. Despite how big that wicked Communist camp was, when [gods] wanted it to dissolve, it dissolved in a matter of days. (*Applause*) It all depends on whether gods need something or not. Isn't that so?

Everything here in human society was established for Fa-rectification, and all that exists today exists for the sake of my Dafa disciples validating the Fa. Remember: *you* are the stars of today's world, *you* are the lives that sentient beings are watching the most intently, and *you* are beings who are determining the future of every person in the human world! (*Applause*) So, saving all beings and cultivating yourselves well are of the utmost importance for you, the Dafa disciples. It's not done just for the Consummation of your own being—it is also about fulfilling the hopes that have been placed in you by sentient beings, by more beings! Okay, I'll stop here. (*Long, enthusiastic applause*)

Right now [you should just focus on] the things that you are doing, so I don't want to distract you from what you are currently doing by talking about too many other things. The things that you are doing now are crucial, so I won't say more. I thank you all! (*Enthusiastic applause*)

Li Hongzhi

May 22, 2005 in Toronto)

To the European Fa Conference in Stockholm

To the European Fa Conference:

Greetings, Dafa disciples.

Everything in the world was established and created for the Fa-rectification, and Dafa disciples are the great figures of our time. Since ancient times the beings in all realms have waited in anticipation. Gather up and rescue the beings that you are to save! Have righteous thoughts and righteous actions, dissolve all hindrances, and spread the facts widely. Divine beings are among men.

I wish the Fa conference success.

Li Hongzhi

June 12, 2005

Teaching the Fa in the City of Chicago

Good afternoon, everyone! (*Disciples, “Good afternoon, Master!”*) You’ve been working hard!

Recently I have made it to just about every Fa conference. As you know, there are constant changes in the situation during Fa-rectification. For instance, right now in saving sentient beings, it is necessary to resolve the issue of how people understand the CCP, so you have been working on things related to the *Nine Commentaries*. If I were to talk too much about other things right now, it might distract from what you are doing, and that is why I don’t plan on talking too much. Since arriving in Chicago, I had been considering whether I should come to the conference. (*Master smiles*) Then, after I thought it over, I decided to come, because at each of these recent conferences there have been some students who have just stepped forward and students who have just come here from Mainland China. And of course, the students want to see Master, so I thought I would come see you in person. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

Let me take this opportunity to mention something. You know, as Dafa cultivators in the Fa-rectification period, the historic mission that you have—this great responsibility—is indeed enormous. What lies before you is not merely personal cultivation or saving a few people. The entire human race is before you, and the Chinese people, in particular. The situation will change later on, and it won’t be as hard to [save people then]. But with things as they now stand, it is extremely hard to save Chinese people, enormously difficult. So you have come up with all kinds of ways to do it—which shocks the wicked people and strikes fear into them—and this is having a great effect in clarifying the truth and saving sentient beings. You have done well in these things, but sometimes you are too hasty and overly eager.

You might have heard recently that the matter of putting the CCP on trial would be postponed. Here is a thought on the subject. I told you a long time ago that a Dafa disciple, or a cultivator, has no enemies. The only thing you have a role in is saving people, and you have nothing to do with using human means and human principles to punish or pronounce judgment on people. This is a fundamental issue!

But in order to stop the evil, the people who are no longer salvageable, and the diehard followers of the CCP, it has been necessary for you to organize some activities and do some things. Certain things are to be done by non-practitioners, however. Specifically, in society many people are participating in the [China] democracy movement and have formed various political organizations. They have political aspirations and they want to have a certain political system put in place in China. Whatever they do, those are human affairs. But in terms of exposing the CCP’s evil nature, they have indeed had a big impact. In this vein, the media outlets Dafa disciples have set up are part of society’s media, and can, in order to expose the CCP’s evilness, provide extensive coverage of those activities and support what they do. It helps the Chinese people see the wicked CCP’s evil nature and, to an extent, it has the effect of rescuing Chinese people. So that’s not a problem. But if we do things exactly as non-practitioners do, or if we do these things directly as Dafa disciples, then it’s not so appropriate. Still, Master does affirm the ideas you have come up with and the formats you have adopted—they are not wrong.

In a time to come, not only will mankind need to put these extremely bad people on trial and have them dealt with accordingly, it will also be necessary to establish a correct means of deciding things by law, and at that point it will be fine to do these things. Dafa disciples can help non-practitioners coordinate some of the correct human things that they are doing, there’s no problem with that. The process of doing that can serve to expose and stop the evil. People who are to be saved, however, should not be brought to trial. Think about this, everyone: before you began to cultivate Dafa, many of you present here were also once fooled by that wicked Party into becoming members of it, so do you really want to bring to trial the CCP members who have been fooled by the evil? You should understand that they, too, have been deceived by the wicked CCP, and they are all sentient beings for you to save. You must make

a clear distinction here. You can only do that [bringing them to trial] with a very small number of people, that is, the extremely bad ones. As I said earlier, it's not wrong to do that, as it ends up shocking and frightening the evil, and the future mankind definitely will not let those wicked people off [anyway], but that said, don't get too eager. You can't go and actually do that yourselves. Are you all clear on what I just talked about? (*Applause*)

I was saying that there is nothing wrong with your using legal means to stop the evil's persecution, but you should be clearheaded when it comes to how to carry that out and how to look at the matter. So I have addressed it, and that is how you should look at it. The various ways that you have thought up to dismantle the evil are excellent, as they simultaneously expose the persecution and save sentient beings, leading more people to break from the evil and causing the evil to disintegrate as it carries out the persecution. Having been ruled by the CCP for decades, today's Chinese people have been thoroughly brainwashed. The words that Mainland Chinese people use, the way they think, and how they look at things are all brimming with what the CCP has instilled in them. Only after Mainland Chinese people come to Western societies and stay for a while do they realize what the CCP has turned them into. At this point in time you all understand and know what a tragic state the Chinese people are in, and looking back [you can now see that] the CCP is truly wicked. Right now, though, a lot of Chinese people in Mainland China don't understand or see any of this, for they have grown accustomed to it. That's what they grow up on, starting from day one, and they think that is how normal societies really are, and that maybe that is just the human condition. So when the wicked CCP says something, they basically don't even think about it, [saying to themselves,] "Whatever it says is good must be good, and whatever it says is bad must be bad, so when it says that Falun Gong is bad, then you Falun Gong people most likely really are that way." They don't listen when you try to clarify the facts to them. Given this situation, what should we do? Dafa disciples have a mission to save them. So we will expose the wicked Party's ignoble nature, from past to present, and thereby help the world's people see it for what it is and decide if they still want to believe what it says. Experience has shown that once people come to know these things, upon our telling them the facts again they understand everything, and they are willing to listen. That is what the *Nine Commentaries* is doing.

Judging by the withdrawals from the CCP and the change in the situation in Mainland China, you can see that everything you are doing has brought about tremendous changes in the state of the world. The evil may appear very powerful, but at one time, back when there were two major opposing forces in the world, the wicked Party's bloc was so strong that the Western world was helpless in dealing with it. And yet, when gods wanted it dissolved, it fell apart instantly. It will cease to exist once it is no longer needed.

The main part of Dafa disciples is cultivating and being tempered in China. So, could the political situation in China and the existence of the CCP be accidental? The entirety of the wicked Party's so-called socialist front has been dismantled, but why hasn't [the CCP] been dismantled? Isn't it because the old forces planned it that way for Dafa disciples? So, none of this is coincidental. Even though we oppose the old forces and don't accept or acknowledge this persecution or any of the things that they have forced on us, these things *are* having a destructive effect. As we negate them, we are walking a straight path while at the same time thinking of every possible way to save all beings, save the people of the world, and save the Chinese people.

Many of today's people, especially Chinese people, don't have simple backgrounds. As I have mentioned before, many Chinese people were once kings of different nations throughout the world in different eras who later reincarnated in China. And of course it's not limited to kings—practically entire royal courts reincarnated in China. Of course, not only does a person have his past in the human world, he also has a place where his being ultimately comes from, which are both extraordinary. And this is

why the people that Dafa disciples need to save are certainly not just ordinary beings.

The cultivators of old used to talk about saving sentient beings, but did anyone really save sentient beings? Other than the great enlightened beings with True Enlightenment such as Shakyamuni and Jesus, who has saved sentient beings? Nobody has. The beings Shakyamuni and Jesus saved were intentionally placed there for them, and that laid cultural groundwork in history for Dafa. At the same time, [what they went through was] an indication of the problems divine beings would come across and encounter on their path, played out in history for today's people to see. And they of course wanted me to see it. That's what it was all about. What [those enlightened beings] were dealing with at the time was a purely human race in its early stages, with early-stage human bodies; whereas the human beings you are dealing with have human appearances and human bodies, while in reality the beings inside are no longer so simple.

Then what kind of people does Dafa save? What kind of people do Dafa disciples set out to rescue? It's no simple matter, for sure. Why is it that we, who are being persecuted so severely, still want to save sentient beings? Why is it that we, while experiencing such ruthless persecution, are still thinking of others? [Because] it is something that history has entrusted you with, for these people [you are to save] represent immense groups of beings. So this isn't just about people, but is about the hope that the beings of the cosmos have placed in you, and placed in the fact that Dafa is spreading broadly throughout the world today. It is a predestined opportunity for them. So if any being misses this predestined opportunity, it might well be that he has lost it forever.

The Three Realms look to be small, and human society seems to be minuscule when set in contrast to high-level beings, yet this place has in fact become the focal point of Fa-rectification. I have spoken before about why I spread the Fa here. Then when the Fa is being spread here, could things such as the surrounding environment, the beings that come here, or any of the things you face just be simple matters? Absolutely not, though these things do come across as being no different than things that happen in society or previous human states of affairs. A human being is just that, a human being, and he definitely can't just become divine. From antiquity to the present, it has been [a process of] creating a form of being such as this and of molding what humans are like now, including people's thoughts, overall state, and the way of life that characterize today's people. That is the process that has taken place. And it is here in this setting that we spread the Fa, save people, and rescue sentient beings. Even though many elements that were part of that process were forced upon me and the Dafa disciples—that is, by factors in the old cosmos—it is still hard for you to distinguish those things since they were mixed together [with other things]. We reject all of the old arrangements, and the path we take is our own. So that problems won't arise for you, Dafa disciples, I have often told you to study the Fa a lot and keep up your righteous thoughts. When you do these things, it is then possible for you to walk correctly on your own path and to do well at what a Dafa disciple is supposed to do. No matter how busy you get, you need to study the Fa, no matter what.

As for what lies ahead, things might change more and more quickly. But, as I brought up when teaching the Fa to you before, whether the change in the state of society is negative or positive, or, put another way, whether what comes about is bad or good, it is a test for our Dafa disciples all the same, and not a reason to become content. If things really do change for the better, it will be a different sort of test for you, and you still shouldn't become content. By all means you need to do what a Dafa disciple should do, maintaining your righteous thoughts.

I'll stop here for now. As Dafa disciples do things for Dafa today, some of you are responsible for working on many projects simultaneously. And there are things at home to handle, Dafa things, work-related things, and social or other things, all of which puts quite a strain on you. I see this. But no matter what, you have managed to think of Dafa's things as most important, and at critical times you

have remembered that you are a Dafa disciple and need to handle things well. From that perspective, you are really terrific. In any event, Master sees and knows this. So many years have passed over the course of history, the Three Realms have existed for so long, and so many sentient beings have come here over time, but all hopes are being placed in this one moment out of all the ages. This instant is precious beyond measure. Completing the last leg of this journey well is what's most magnificent. So for this reason, though during this stage your time is tight, and you are very tired and have little time to rest, when Master sees how many of you have managed to do well he can't help but feel gratified. And it is on this account that I thank you all. (*Long, roaring applause*)

A lot of people have said we are involving ourselves in political affairs, and some students of ours who haven't studied the Fa diligently are confused, saying, "Isn't the *Nine Commentaries* getting us involved in political things?" It is for the sake of Dafa that human society exists, and history was arranged accordingly. You know, we can consult the example of the sages from antiquity, the great enlightened beings of True Enlightenment. Take for instance the five thousand words² Lao Zi imparted: if we just consider the superficial, most obvious things he talked about, they are mostly about how to rule as a king, how to administer the country, and so on. If we look at it from a human perspective, isn't it political? But, it is not political. We could of course draw upon many historical examples. Have you thought about this: what the wicked CCP is doing are the actions of an evil religion that unifies church and state, and it thereby drags China's entire populace into political affairs. When we help people break from and see through the wicked CCP, aren't we in fact helping people break from politics? (*Applause*) The reality is that our fundamental goal is not to overthrow the wicked CCP, and I'm not fighting against it—it's not worthy! (*Applause*) How could those who are on their way to divinity get caught up in fighting with people? Even if the wicked CCP *is* an evil spirit and vicious fiend, it's still not worthy. Fa-rectification is Fa-rectification, and as Dafa disciples go about saving beings, they must dissolve all evil things that obstruct people's salvation.

It is for the purpose of saving all beings and saving the people in the world today that we help people to see the wicked CCP for what it is. Of course, no matter how the CCP tries to hide the evil face of its wicked gangster regime, once the world's people come to know it for what it is, they will realize that it is evil, and they will not cooperate with it anymore, choosing instead to withdraw from the Party. And that is when it ceases to exist. But that is not what we are trying to do—our goal is to save sentient beings. Many things here in the human world, here in the delusion, are hard to see for what they are, so it's a matter of how people look at and understand things.

Of course, being Dafa disciples—and this especially goes for the many students who have studied the Fa solidly—you can grasp this. In the course of clarifying the facts, you have come up with many examples to illustrate this and explained things well. So the path we have taken has not been wrong, and it is just a matter of how to do even better. I'll stop here for today. I thank you all. (*Long, roaring applause*)

Master continues to hear about and see the good things you are doing. (*Warm applause*)

Li Hongzhi

June 26, 2005

² A reference to Lao Zi's famous work, the *Tao Te Ching* (*Dao De Jing*).

Study the Fa Well, and Getting Rid of Attachments is Not Hard

This article is very well done. Those students who are still not clearheaded about the methods Dafa disciples are using to validate the Fa and save all beings should read this article. Even though the article is not as comprehensive as it could be and is limited in its depth, it is clear about everything that Dafa disciples should do to validate the Fa and save beings.

The fact is, those who can't step forward, regardless of the excuse, are concealing fear. Yet for cultivators, fear or lack thereof proves [one's] humanity or divinity, and it is what differentiates cultivators from ordinary people. It is something that a cultivator must face, and the biggest human attachment that a cultivator must remove.

Li Hongzhi

July 20, 2005

Comment on a student's article

Shed the Human Mindset

This article is well written, and the understanding it expresses is even better. Some students really haven't regarded studying the Fa as something important, and often look at situations that arise among Dafa students with an ordinary human mindset; and it's not limited to blindly admiring certain people. The display of this human mindset truly, in fact, bespeaks of the [difference between] a cultivator and an ordinary person. This brings upon oneself many problems in cultivation, and interferes with efforts to validate the Fa and the coordination and cooperation that takes place among students and that is based on the Fa. The most prominent manifestation of this is the severe persecution many students face as a result of their strong human mindset and lack of righteous thoughts. The solution is to without exception make studying the Fa a priority and to study the Fa diligently. This Great Law is able to rectify the colossal firmament and allows people to cultivate to Consummation-shouldn't you treasure an opportunity as rare and precious as this? And this is an opportunity that will be gone in an instant!

Li Hongzhi

September 1, 2005

Comment on a student's article

To all Dafa disciples around the world and in mainland China, a happy Mid-Autumn Festival!

A Will That Ebbs Not

(in Song Dynasty poetic form)

Surpassing time and space,
Fa-rectification dashes forward
Massive is the challenge,
but your will is firm
Unbridled are the wicked,
yet you keep your bearings
Purging evil as if but whisking dust away

My disciples,
walk straight the path of Dafa
May your radiance grace the human world,
as you transcend the Three Realms
Disciples of Fa,
be diligent, with a will that ebbs not
The countless years of hardship were all for this time

Li Hongzhi
Mid-Autumn Festival
September 18, 2005

Walk Straight Your Path

Fa-rectification means rectifying the cosmos's past Fa-a Fa no longer right-and it encompasses [rectifying] all living beings, high-level as well as low, found in the cosmos. Of course, this also includes the Fa that they have left at different levels, among which are the Fa they have passed on to human beings to guide man's cultivation. Fa-rectification Period Dafa Disciples are to take validating Zhen-Shan-Ren and attaining the Dafa of the new cosmos as fundamental, so how could they disseminate and validate things that are not part of Zhen-Shan-Ren or the new cosmos? Don't let the pursuit of some particular goal cause you to ignore the meaning of a Dafa disciple's existence. In fact, making progress in one's own cultivation is a part of the process of saving beings. Saving beings, improving yourself, and resisting the persecution are all acts that validate the Fa; only walking straight your path amounts to validating the Fa. Also, don't use the wicked things that happen during the persecution as an excuse for not validating the Fa or not validating it well, for the reality is, the wicked persecution arranged by the old forces was put in place to test you. Even though we don't acknowledge the old forces' existence or arrangements, they have done what they've done. You play the leading role in this period of history, and the existence of everything at present, whether it be evil or the upright gods, has to do with you. It is walking straight your path that is most important. In the final time, the evil's factors will dwindle, circumstances will ease up, and the world's state of affairs will change, but never will the path that you are to walk straight change.

Li Hongzhi
September 25, 2005

To the Prague Fa Conference

Greetings to the Dafa disciples at the Prague Fa Conference!

I hope our Fa conference is a success.

Improve together, demonstrate the demeanor of Dafa disciples, do well the three things Dafa disciples are supposed to do well, and ensure that our Fa conference is a success and brings results.

Li Hongzhi
October 2, 2005

The Closer to the End, the More Diligent You Should Be

A person has many tests to overcome in the course of cultivation, one reason being, from the time of birth on, a person ceaselessly forms notions of every sort as he comes to an understanding of human society, and attachments result. Because human society is a place in which suffering goes hand-in-hand with enjoyment, life does abound with suffering, however wealthy you may be or however high your status. Because pain is hard on people, they try to, consciously or unconsciously, ward off suffering in hopes of leading a more pleasant life. And so it is that in the pursuit of happiness people form ideas about how to avoid harm, how to live well, how to get ahead in society and achieve fame and success, how to acquire more for themselves, how to come out on top, and so on. To this end, as they gain experience people come to form notions about life; and those experiences, in turn, come to fortify these notions as people live out their lives.

But in reality, what human society takes to be truths are, from the perspective of the cosmos, inversions of truth; when humans go through hardship and suffer it is so that they may pay off karma and thereby have happiness in the future. A cultivator thus needs to cultivate by correct and upright truths. Going through hardship and suffering is an outstanding opportunity to remove karma, be cleansed of sin, purify the body, elevate your plane of thought, and rise in level—it's an extraordinarily good thing. This is a correct and upright Fa-truth. But as cultivation is lived out, when the suffering bears down on you and conflicts come up that hit upon the deepest part of you—and especially when it rattles the rigid notions you have—the test is really hard to pass. It can even be to the point that you know full well it's a test but still can't let go of your attachments. What's more, Dafa disciples are cultivating in this "real" world that brims with temptation, so it becomes even more difficult—and even more important—to change those notions. That is why I often tell you to study the Fa a lot as you cultivate and why I periodically publish articles meant to point out common problems, continuously correcting the direction of things. Even then, new problems do arise from time to time on your path of cultivation. As far as how things are now, in the course of the cosmos's Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples' validating of the Fa, gigantic changes have been effected in the circumstances of the persecution that arose on the Dafa disciples' path of cultivation. The cultivation environment and the perceptions people have are both undergoing changes on a fundamental level. This phenomenon indicates that Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples' cultivation are in their final stages. And yet a small number of students—veteran students, even—have to differing degrees exhibited a despondent state and slackened in their resolve to be diligent. They haven't realized that this is an attachment to the duration of Fa-rectification, or is caused by interference from incorrect, acquired notions, which results in their gaps being exploited by interfering factors that the old forces left behind early on in the surface of the human dimension, wicked specters, or rotten demons—things that have magnified and strengthened those attachments and human notions—all of which has brought about this despondent state.

Actually, if you think about it, the cultivators of the past didn't dare to slack off for even a second, and that was when it took an entire lifetime to complete the journey. So how can Dafa disciples—who are to achieve the Attainment Status of a being who is saved by Dafa and who have the most convenient cultivation way—not be even more diligent when they are given this most glorious honor of Fa-validating cultivation in a brief cultivation period that passes in the blink of an eye? You already know that the form of a Dafa disciple's cultivation has one cultivate here, in the world, among ordinary people, and that the cultivation directly targets one's mind. All human attachments and notions that interfere with validating the Fa and saving sentient beings must be removed. For cultivators traveling a divine path, is it really that hard to get rid of those attachments that arise from human thinking and to change those notions? If a cultivator doesn't want to get rid of even those things, well, how is he to show that he's a cultivator? Of course, most disciples who are in this state are that way because, at the

beginning, they didn't realize that they had subtle attachments or were being interfered with by their own notions, and so the evil has exploited this gap and magnified those factors. I know that after you become clear on this you will quickly catch up, but you should take fewer detours on this most magnificent, divine path; not leave reason for regret in your futures; and not fall so far behind in terms of levels. That is my hope, your hope, and the hope of the beings who are counting on you.

Li Hongzhi

October 8, 2005

The Red Tide's Wane

(In *Ci* Lyric Verse)

The Red Tide fades as ordained,
its time now past
Signs of decline make ever so visible
 the wicked Party's evil
Shameless are the acts, done for power
Greedy officials courting danger
Minds devoid of good thoughts
More high-handedness
 breeds only more resentment
Who'd want to still persecute?
The day of reckoning draws near

Li Hongzhi

October 19, 2005

Mature

Having read the papers from the mainland Chinese Dafa disciples' Internet experience sharing conference, I find that none of them are written now with human attachments; there is no sense that the papers were written to complete some task, nor, in either form or content, done using clichéd, bogus, vacuous Party-style rhetoric; absent is the attachment of reporting accomplishments with the mentality of "If I don't tell people, how will they know"; and for the most part they are free of the Party culture's logic. I could also sense in them a maturation in the authors' cultivation.

The form cultivation takes for Dafa disciples is one in which they cultivate among ordinary people, and it is among ordinary people that they validate the Fa, save sentient beings, and work against the persecution. In this, a circumstance in which no cultivation form was left by any predecessors as a referent, it is incumbent upon the cultivators to blaze their own trails, and it is required of each person that he affirm the path that he himself has come to realize—role models aren't set up to follow. The path that each person takes can be an example only to posterity. And there is no [cultivating] in another's place—the one who cultivates gains. Under the intense, sinister pressure that was forced upon them; on a cultivation path with nothing to reference; living in a most materialistic and practical society of man; with human morality sliding downhill fast; and with strict requirements for self-improvement set forth for Dafa disciples by the Great Law, you have nonetheless made it through. The papers mostly involve rationally analyzing and uncovering shortcomings, and they exchange thoughts for the purpose of validating the Fa, reducing losses, helping fellow cultivators to think and act righteously, thinking of ways to help fellow cultivators who are being persecuted, and saving more sentient beings. Gone are the flowery expressions meant for affective show: the papers are full of substance, and they are accurate, clean, and free of human sentiments. They are not something an ordinary person could write, for the inner world of a cultivator is pure and clean.

This is but one of the feelings I had from reading the online papers shared by the mainland Chinese Dafa disciples. My overall impression is that most Dafa disciples have matured; the way in which they are cultivating has matured; the understanding cultivators have of cultivation has matured; and the rational behavior that comes from a progressive decrease in human thoughts has, likewise, matured. When all Dafa disciples are like this, the evil will be completely eliminated and Gods and Buddhas will grandly manifest.

Li Hongzhi

October 29, 2005

To the Israel Fa Conference

Greetings to the Dafa disciples of Israel and those attending the conference!

Dafa disciples' Fa-conferences are the Dafa disciples' environment in ordinary human society in which to learn from each other. Owing to the fact that so much time is spent amidst the reality of ordinary human society, the time Dafa disciples have together is all the more precious, and Dafa disciples' Fa-conferences are furthermore an excellent opportunity for Dafa disciples to come together and improve as a whole. Master is confident that through this experience sharing conference you will be enriched, and I would like to wish the Fa-conference success. I hope that you will do well the three tasks, just as I hope that you will walk well, with righteous thoughts and actions, the path of cultivation.

Li Hongzhi

December 3, 2005

Teaching the Fa in San Francisco, 2005 (Lecture and Q&A)

(Roaring applause. Students say, "Hello Master!")

Good morning! *(Applause. Students: "Master, please sit.")* If I stand you can see me better. You've been working hard. *(Applause)* I haven't been out West for quite some time, and all along I've wished to see you. Now is the time of Dafa disciples validating the Fa and saving sentient beings, and you have labored hard. But regardless of the situation, Dafa disciples are now maturing ever more fully. And as the overall Fa-rectification process has moved forward continuously, the overall situation has changed a great deal.

You have seen that, judging by the attitudes people have towards Dafa and Dafa disciples, and by people's capacity to see through the shameless actions of the CCP's slanderous media, everything has changed. That being the case, for Dafa disciples it amounts to being tested under new circumstances and conditions. And so it is that when circumstances ease up, one is prone to becoming lax; when the pressure lets up it leads a person to feel relaxed and not make every minute count as before. But that's not acceptable. The fact is, you are cultivators, and you can't afford to cease being diligent no matter what kind of circumstances you encounter. The more relaxed or comfortable things get, in fact, the more serious is the test you face. Regardless of how the situation may change, the terms of cultivation and the cultivation state required of you will never change, and for this reason you cannot let up. Moreover, as you have seen, though the situation is changing, the evil specter has yet to be fully cleaned out, and right now it is still having a very negative effect.

Take San Francisco, for example. I've found that the environment of the downtown area and that of the whole Bay Area still isn't up to par; the evil factors here are still abundant. The fact is, you should make these places the focus. You should go where there are a lot of Chinese people and clarify the truth, and save those badly-poisoned Chinese communities. You have all seen that the places where tourist groups from mainland China shuttle in and out are where they are concentrated. There are a lot of Chinese people in other parts of the Bay Area, too, but they are scattered. The goal of your clarifying the truth is to save as many sentient beings as possible, and those who have been poisoned the most severely are none other than the Chinese people. Superficially speaking, what Dafa disciples are doing is counteracting the persecution, but in reality your greatest duty is to save sentient beings, and that is the true embodiment of validating the Fa. The persecution that has been perpetrated upon Dafa disciples and upon the people of China was launched by the wicked Party in mainland China, and this means that you need to focus on mainland China, to focus on the people of mainland China. Chinatown is precisely the kind of place that mainland Chinese patronize the most, so you can't let up there and lose out on that place, a place where Dafa disciples stand to have a tremendous effect. For this reason you should all take pause and seriously ask yourselves: Had you been feeling that those places were a bit too evil and were you a little afraid? But think about it—who should actually be afraid of whom?

Under the cruelest of persecutions, the Dafa disciples of mainland China haven't been frightened and have come through it; they have even, in fact, cultivated to the point of maturity. If you take a look back at things, in fact, though the persecution seems to have no order to it, wouldn't you agree that the changes in the situation and the different circumstances that have come about all have a purpose? Whether [something is due to] Master's wishes or the old forces' control, isn't the goal behind it the successful cultivation of Dafa disciples and the disintegration of the evil? Could all of this have happened arbitrarily? It's merely that the bad people are not allowed to see the order behind it. Whenever the wicked CCP regime has decided to knock somebody down, who has been able to hold up for even just three days? You, meanwhile, have made it through six or seven years, and that is something that the sinister Party simply never considered possible. Is that something ordinary people

could do? Could they withstand it? Then are these ordinary things that we're dealing with? Are they things ordinary people could bring about? Only people who cultivate, only those who are looked after by gods, could make it through. Isn't that true? So there is nothing for Dafa disciples to fear. And that is especially so outside of mainland China—isn't the setting more favorable, relatively speaking? Then what's there to fear? And what is more, you are truly saving people—openly and with dignity saving their very being—and they will be able to sense that. On top of that, as you go about clarifying the truth, the benevolence you exude and the righteous thoughts you project disintegrate the evil, awakening those lives you save and causing them to recover their very selves, and that can lead a person to truly come to rationally see these things for himself. And of course, as soon as people wake up, things are immediately different.

There are also some students who don't have a good understanding of the changes in the situation that have come about due to Fa-validation, and this phenomenon, applying to a handful of cases, can be seen in every region. Namely, every time Dafa's progress enters a new stage, there are some students who evaluate Dafa cultivation with human thinking. The path of Dafa disciples' cultivation is such that your cultivation doesn't involve breaking from the secular world, it's that kind of path. So, as you cultivate in the society of ordinary people, you are either being polluted by ordinary society or you are changing ordinary society. And that's for sure. Thus, throughout the course of Fa-rectification, Dafa is and has been transforming everything at lightning speed, while Dafa disciples have been validating the Fa, saving sentient beings, and purging the evil that persecutes Dafa disciples. The changes in the overall situation will ceaselessly continue to bring forth in the human world different states of affairs at different time periods. This is what students refer to when they speak of "the progress of Fa-rectification." But as soon as obvious changes in the state of things come about, a handful of students can't keep up. And whenever they can't keep up, they pull out the top excuse: "Aren't we getting political? How can we cultivate like this?" But the truth is, those who say this are, on a fundamental level, looking at cultivation and conducting themselves based on human thinking. The ultimate source of this is fear taking hold.

As I have said before, this is the form that Dafa disciples' cultivation takes today—the cultivation is done among ordinary people, and you cultivate without breaking from the secular world. I discussed this before in teaching the Fa: It's precisely because Dafa disciples cultivate this way that they can achieve something never seen before in history—a human becoming divine through cultivation. (*Applause*) Because it's done amidst the realities of human society, it is truly the cultivator himself who handles himself well amidst the lure of worldly gain, who under intense worldly temptation manages to discard human attachments, and discard all sorts of entanglements that arise from emotion. This form of cultivation directly targets the human mind, meaning, it targets the cultivator's most surface sensory perceptions and his thoughts in reaction to them, as well as his direct actions. Then for this person, if in cultivation he can cast off all of that, isn't he cultivating himself? Isn't he positioning himself while amidst real, immediate interests? Can ordinary people do that? They can't. And could the cultivators of the past? Neither could they. So the cultivation methods of the past, all the various cultivation ways left to human society in history, took the approach of leaving society to cultivate. They didn't dare to cultivate in the secular world, and believed that cultivating there wasn't feasible. That was because they didn't have the Great Law (*Dafa*)—they didn't have the Great Law to guide their cultivation. Today there is the Great Law to guide people. Now you *can* accomplish this, and indeed, this is something that you have put into practice and accomplished. In other words, not only has this path of cultivation been blazed, but also, your actual experiences have abundantly proven the correctness of this path and the maturity of Dafa disciples as a result of the cultivation process. You are now in the last stage of heading towards Consummation, and all along, right up to today, you have been doing so in an extremely steady and solid manner. Even if shortcomings have shown themselves in one way or

another, the fact is, that's going to be the case for any cultivation form, because on every path there are those who fail midway—all of that is normal. Under the tests that the human mind is put to, a state will come about in a cultivator when understandings born of both divine and human thoughts are present and collide. When human thinking gains the upper hand, that person heads toward humanness; when divine thinking and a person's righteous thoughts gain the upper hand, he heads toward godhood.

Let's think about it, actually: What is "politics"? With some people, whenever they don't understand the actions we take against the persecution, they start saying we are "getting political." The way I see it, those certain people among our Dafa disciples [for whom this is the case] have fear inside. Fundamentally, it's fear that is causing mischief, leading to human anxiety. As for how ordinary people look at [what we're doing], Dafa disciples don't need to be concerned about that. So long as you, a Dafa disciple, do things righteously, you will transform the environment around you, and you will change people. You don't need to say that much. My Dafa is taught to today's Dafa disciples, not to ordinary people, and you shouldn't get overly concerned about what people think. As long as you walk straightly your own cultivation path here in the human world, everyone will see you in a positive light.

What is "politics"? There are different ideas about this even among ordinary people. I'll tell you that the concept of "politics" that Chinese people have involves taking whatever activities people do in response to the form of the political system or that have to do with the state's policies and calling it "getting political." In Western society it's different. As they think of it, the things that people do in the public sphere, when they don't involve money or religion, count as political. But regardless of how the term is defined or however it's understood, what I want to convey is that the form cultivation takes is not bound by strict limitations. The cultivation you know about from history includes Buddhism, original Buddhism, Daoism, and original Daoism and their cultivation forms, along with Catholicism, Christianity, etc., and their religious practices, and then there have been ancient religions and different forms of belief in the divine. Religious faith is itself a form of cultivation activity, and in the process of believing, a person can elevate his realm of thought—it's that kind of practice. Whether or not they have the concept of "cultivation" in Western culture, it still counts as cultivation all the same and similarly requires a person to improve himself. Isn't the process of a life moving towards divinity one of cultivation? Whatever the form a person adopts, though, whichever one it may be among those that were left to us from the past, I will tell you, they are not the only forms of cultivation, and much less do all lives in the cosmos—especially the human race—have to adhere to these few forms. So they are not the sole paths to godhood. They are just a few forms of cultivation culture given to man by the measureless, countless gods, and nothing more than that. Moreover, they can't truly enable the person himself, or, his master soul, to cultivate into a god. In the past it was always the subordinate soul that did the cultivating. The true person, regardless of the method he cultivated with, would have his subordinate soul depart and the person himself would remain in the cycle of rebirth. Buddha Shakyamuni stated that there were 84,000 cultivation disciplines, but that was an understanding communicated based on his realm and within a certain scope. The Daoists hold that there are 3,600 cultivation disciplines, and that is likewise an understanding based on their particular realm. The truth is, the Fa principles they taught were limited. Then how many paths are there in the cosmos that can enable a life to ascend, to return to a higher realm? There are countless ways. However many sentient beings there are, that's how many paths there are. There are that many. With so many cultivation forms, then, of course they can't all be brought here to human society. The cosmos has a measureless, incalculable number of Buddhas, countless Gods, and moreover, to each of the multitude of gods, the cosmos at their position seems to already be at its zenith, with no lives existing above them and nothing existing above where they are. But in fact, in larger realms there are still more incomparably massive and high realms and even more Buddhas and gods that are innumerable, and when they look upon the gods below them, they see them as ordinary people. Then just how many paths are there? They, too, are

countless. You know that Buddha Shakyamuni validated and enlightened to his cultivation discipline, which is summarized by the words "precept, concentration, wisdom"; that's the path Shakyamuni validated and enlightened to. There are so many Buddhas in the cosmic body, they are simply immeasurable, incalculable, yet in the cosmos there is no second Buddha whose validation and enlightenment consisted of "precept, concentration, wisdom." In other words, every god has his own path, and each god's system has for its sentient beings its own realm's unique standards and its own criteria based on its Law for a life's rise or fall. Then wouldn't you say there are many approaches to cultivation? The number is enormous.

Having said all this, I should tell you: Since there are so many cultivation forms in this cosmos, someone viewing this from a human perspective [might wonder], in Fa-rectification is there any cultivation form that I couldn't have Dafa disciples adopt and use to cultivate? To be explicit about it, if I, your master, didn't have you take this path you are walking today and instead used a different form, then you could still cultivate to Consummation. You know that the cosmos is going through Fa-rectification and everything is being created anew, and this is equivalent to recreating the cosmic firmament, recreating the cosmos. As for what form the future cosmos or future lives are to take, and in what fashion they will exist, or what type of Fa and what means of saving people will be left to the future—this isn't something that the lives of the past can determine, and it's not something that just any life can determine regardless of how high in level that life may be, for this is about what the *future* needs. Since the future's needs are the determining factor, think about it, if Master were to have you cultivate within the framework of society's politics, would that work? (*Applause*) Yes! It would for sure, it definitely would. As long as it had the Fa's standards and requirements, as long as lives could elevate, and as long as lives were able to reach high realms, then it would definitely work, for that would be the future's choice, the choice of the future cosmos, the choice of what cultivation form Dafa disciples are to go by. (*Applause*) It is merely that Master didn't choose to have you take that path, to walk the path of cultivation in that way. I have imparted to you a broader, most ideal form of cultivation, for, "the Great Way has no form"! (*Applause*) Each of you is a part of society, belonging to different social strata, each having your own job or profession in society, and having your own skills that you have acquired. In each respective setting, under the guidance of Dafa and free of form, all are able to cultivate; there are no rules or regulations, no religious formalities, and no commandments. This is something that not a single divine being in the past dared to do, but today, the Dafa disciples and I have done it. (*Applause*) Why is that so? Because this Fa is immense, and the Great Law of the cosmos is directly saving the Disciples of Dafa. Only this way could it be achieved.

Let me in fact go a step further. What's meant by "getting involved with politics," and what's meant by "cultivation form"? This is where a lot of people err. Suppose that I, Li Hongzhi, had chosen in this life to be an emperor and to lead a group of subjects to cultivate. Would that work? (*Applause*) Yes! It definitely would! As long as the Fa was upright and could truly ensure that lives elevated, and as long as the path was walked righteously, then it definitely would work! If it really were as I described, then that, too, would count as the future's choice, and it too would be the requirement of the future cosmos. Master didn't have you take that path, that's all. Whatever is chosen and whichever path is taken, that has to do with what the future needs, and it is what Master gives to the Dafa disciples. I chose the best form of cultivation to give to you all. (*Applause*) What I just talked about, being principles of high levels, would be hard for an ordinary person to understand. He simply can't understand such things. I am teaching the Fa to Dafa disciples, and you are quite clear as to what Dafa disciples are doing. Back in the years when Master was spreading the Fa, I talked about something, and it's something many students have heard about before. Namely, how the Buddhist and Daoist systems fought over which outward appearance—Buddhist or Daoist—I would choose. They argued fiercely over which kind of god's outer form I would assume to spread the Fa, since whichever kind of god's appearance was

chosen would bestow glory and honor on that group of gods and on those lives. Think about it everyone, at that time the Daoists wanted me to use a Daoist form to spread the Fa, and it was for this reason that in recent times the Daoist religion appeared in China. In the past there was no Daoist religion. It was passed down from a master to a single disciple and done so in private, so it couldn't save sentient beings on a large scale, save all sentient beings, bring up that many disciples, or have all that many people reach Consummation. It was because of this that they established the Daoist religion. This is all in the past, though, and these are things I have talked about before, so I won't repeat things further. All of this is to say, which theory for cultivation, which method for carrying it out, and which outward form was adopted for Dafa disciples' cultivation was very significant, and especially significant was which method Master would adopt. That's because in history they knew well beforehand that Dafa would be spread here in human society, and so the old forces long, long ago started making arrangements for things. And actually, it's not just the old forces that made arrangements of this sort. With a cosmos this immense, no matter how I explain things to you, I do it within a scope that you can comprehend. Regardless of how this material entity ascends and which realm it reaches, it is merely one gigantic system, and generally speaking it is in regards to this system that I explain things to you. In fact a cosmic system of this sort, a system so enormous, seems to the sentient beings within it to be boundless and limitless, and even to a gigantic god that is how it appears to be. But in the context of a yet more distant, still more immense cosmic body, it is actually but a speck of dust. And in even more remote places there are still other countless cosmic bodies like that; and in places too remote to reach—places that even gods can't reach—there are still even more immense cosmic bodies. What are the lives there like? How do they discern [lives'] levels and how do those lives improve themselves? The gods in other systems have no way of knowing this, and in fact wouldn't understand it. These things that I am discussing are unfathomable to the gods of other cosmoses.

What I'm telling all of you is that many things in human society are not simple, either. You know that in today's society there are truly a dazzling array of different professions. It seems that this modern society is quite prosperous and has anything and everything. Why is that so? Why wasn't it like this in ancient societies? It is because, as I said earlier, many lives from distant cosmic bodies brought their things here to the human world. Why did they do that? I just talked about how Master had to choose between Buddhist and Daoist [images], how even the external appearance was really significant. Well, how could it be limited to only those things? The paths of cultivation, the different kinds of cultivation ways that were created in history for mankind, and even the forms of existence of many ethnicities and the characteristics of different cultures were all a result of those gods from distant cosmic bodies putting in their piece and presenting for Dafa all that would be involved in their paths. The point was to get here everything that Li Hongzhi would have to choose from, so that it would be fair to everyone. Let me give a few simple examples. You all know that along with painting there is music and sculpture. Those things and also modern science and technology are all different skills for various facets of human life. It seems as though human beings created those things themselves and did so to enrich human society, but that's actually not the case at all. What's the real reason, then? Let me tell you that those are in fact [parts of] cultivation and unique characteristics of the realms of lives from distant systems. Elevation in that kind of realm involves combining the understanding of those skills with the Fa. It requires elevating one's understanding, a limitless upward climb. Particles that make up high-level dimensions are smaller, and the sound-field there is also composed of microcosmic material particles, so the music is more pleasing to hear and the colors are more beautiful. All such matter is composed of high-level, microcosmic particles, which can't be found by lives in low-level dimensions. The works and the skills there are more advanced and magical, and a life's elevation means the dual elevation of realm and skill, and improvement of that life's understanding in different realms. In other words, if I'm to use the concepts of people on earth to describe it, when you are able to create good

things, it is because you are a good person or because you have done something good. Conversely, only when gods see that you are a good person will they grant you wisdom and allow you to create things. (*Applause*) Isn't human society controlled by gods? These things all in fact have elements of the Fa in them. If I had you adopt those methods, would you still be able to cultivate? Yes, you could cultivate just the same. It's just that I didn't have you take such paths. Those are methods adopted by different cosmic bodies and different lives.

While in the process of rectifying the Fa I discovered a certain situation. What situation, you ask? In an enormous cosmic body that is quite far away, the elevation of lives there is very different from what is understood by lives in the cosmic system that you are in. They are sustained by their skills and the continual improvement of those skills. The gods at a higher level, then, have tied whether the lives at the lower levels can invent things and whether they can produce things onto the elevation of their realms. If a person's realm is elevated, his wisdom will be opened up, and he will be allowed to produce things, create things, and elevate. After he elevates, he will realize again and again that he is able to accomplish those things only because of the rise in his morality, and realize that he is able to elevate only because his own realm has risen. That entire incomparably gigantic system is like this, elevating while in pursuit of some type of skill. That's completely different from what sentient beings in this cosmic system, especially in modern times, understand cultivation to be. So, the gigantic colossal firmament is actually extremely immense, complicated, and orderly. When it comes to what is shown to mankind, what mankind is allowed to know about, and even the skills and the different kinds of cultures and different ways of existence for mankind, human beings think that these things are meant for human society to prosper. Human beings see knowledge and various skills only as things that, through acquisition via real-life experience, have enriched their own lives and created their own cultures. None of that is true. Human beings haven't created anything and are incapable of creating anything. If something doesn't exist in the cosmos, then human beings have no chance whatsoever of creating it. Even the most worthless, degenerate things in society were brought in by various gods. That was done because human society goes according to the principle of mutual generation and mutual inhibition, so alongside the good it is given the bad. Yet having it be bad was not the purpose of bringing it in. The reason is that those things are so different from mankind's ideas and the differences in the lives' forms are so great, and some are the complete opposite of the upright forms. Of course, some things have become even more rotten since being brought over here among humans, for in human society there is the issue of emotion, and under the effect of emotion these things have become more base and even very filthy. They have become a lot worse than they were originally, and this was caused by mankind itself.

Just now we talked about the issue of politics and what getting involved with politics means, and it led Master to talk about those things. That was to help free up your thinking so that you can take a look at this cosmos and know how to look at various things of mankind. They are not as mankind imagines them to be, they're not that simple. There are many different methods of cultivation. This Dafa that I have imparted to you is so enormous, yet there are very few people who can truly understand just how huge, how extraordinary, and how magnificent it really is. Only cultivators at different realms can experience how sacred it is in those realms, and only just that little bit. As cultivators move towards Consummation, and especially after reaching Consummation, the things that cultivators will be shown are so glorious, magnificent, and wonderful that they are simply indescribable. Even gods who are able to make it through the Fa-rectification will marvel with unparalleled awe after seeing all of it. The new cosmos is incomparably glorious, magnificent, and sacred.

As cultivators, you can understand and comprehend what I've just said. There is no need to tell these things to ordinary people. When you clarify the truth don't talk about these things. If you talk about these things, you will scare people off and throw their thinking into disarray. It will be very hard for

them to understand it. If when you clarify the truth you talk about things at a level that's just a little too high, let me tell you, you will no longer be saving sentient beings but instead pushing them down. You can't talk about things at too high of a level. Talking about things at a high or low level is not a simple question of whether you are exercising good judgment. It is a question of whether you are saving sentient beings or destroying them. So when you clarify the truth you absolutely must not speak at too high of a level. Right now when you clarify the truth you only need to talk about the persecution of Dafa disciples, how the evil party has been violating the human rights and the freedom of belief of the Chinese people, how historically the evil party has persecuted the Chinese people and the people of the countries belonging to the wicked Communist bloc, and how it is persecuting Dafa disciples today in the same way. And that's enough. As for high-level cultivation and gods, you shouldn't talk about those things. It's very hard for ordinary people to understand them. You can understand these things, but remember that you too started out as an ordinary person and have come to understand and accept high-level Fa principles after cultivating step by step up through to today. In teaching the Fa, Master likewise started from the simple and progressed to the profound. If I had told you these things right at the beginning, if I had taught you these things right away six or seven, or seven or eight, years ago, you wouldn't have been able to accept them. And even if you could accept them, you wouldn't have understood clearly what I was talking about. That being the case, you not only need to clarify the truth, you also need to be wise while doing so. You should do it with wisdom and not talk about things at too high of a level.

It's been a long time since I last came here, so you probably want me to talk a little bit more. *(Applause)* *(Many practitioners say, "Master, please sit down.")* Let's do it this way. Just as we've done before, you can write questions on slips of paper and pass them up, and I will then answer them. Write the words big. Try your best not to ask questions that have nothing to do with cultivation, and try your best not to ask questions about the many things that you can resolve on your own while cultivating, for you have to walk your own path. The same holds for every student. If [you were to succeed] because I brought you there, then you absolutely couldn't be considered someone who cultivated, and you wouldn't have cultivated. It is extraordinary only when all of the tests are overcome by you yourself. Didn't Buddha Shakyamuni validate and enlighten to his own "precept, concentration, wisdom"? He made it through on his own. It's the same with you: You all must walk your own paths. Okay, now you can pass up your question slips. *(Applause)*

It makes no difference whether you started early or late in cultivation. Everyone seated here today, regardless of whether you are a new or veteran student, when it comes to cultivation all of you are treated the same. Master won't treat you differently just because you are a newer student, nor will I treat others differently because they are veteran students. But being Dafa disciples, you are cultivators. [And since you are] cultivators, you have to cultivate as such. Of course, for newer students there is always a process of understanding things, and that's not a problem. As long as you can truly cultivate based on the Fa and study the Fa regularly, you will be able to quickly catch up.

You can now go ahead and pass up the question slips.

No matter how much power Master has in Fa-rectification, on the surface the old force is still causing a partition, and it has separated Master's enormous power from the surface. Under normal circumstances it wouldn't be able to create this partition, but they are using the method of lining up a great multitude in a constant stream, and using as a partition a gigantic mass and the long, drawn-out time-space contained within that mass. Looking at it from beyond the cosmic bodies, one can see that very soon it will be broken through, but it feels like a few years when measured with the time of the human dimension. But once it *is* broken through, then this entire cosmos's Fa-rectification will be complete. So as [I go through] the process of crashing against it, they do a few things against Master, and have some

effect on Master's surface body. Since July 20, 1999, the evil has done a lot of bad things, but I won't talk about those things too much. There is such an enormous amount of evil for Master to clear away, and Master has to bear the karma of many students, so there is a certain amount of harm done to [Master's] surface body.

Question: Dafa disciples from Chengdu city send their greetings to respected Master!

Teacher: Thank you! Master knows about all the things that are happening in Chengdu.

Question: In explaining the three withdrawals³ to ordinary people, if we talk about prophecies and epidemics will that be putting it at too high a level?

Teacher: Talking about prophecies and epidemics can be used only as a supplement to clarifying the truth, and don't go beyond just mentioning them. Don't take them as an indispensable part or a major part of truth clarification. If you do, [your efforts] will depart from what you want to do and your goal, and [you will] be far too reliant on those prophecies. They can play only a supporting role for you. Don't say too much about them—you can touch upon them and then leave it at that. Only by clarifying the truth with wisdom can you save people.

You all know whom I'm referring to when I say the "archfiend." It has killed so many Dafa disciples through persecution, and it's not that Gods and Buddhas don't want to punish it. In fact Gods and Buddhas, without exception, utterly detest it. When I say "utterly detest it," I'm of course using human language to express it, meaning that it is detested by all. Then why hasn't it been disposed of? Although the old forces' system has been cleared away, the surface of this world has, as you know, not been broken through. In this world that has not been broken through, the old forces set up many things ages ago—tens of millions of years ago. One thing that they set up is turning like a dial. Once it reaches a different position, a celestial phenomenon emerges in the world, and it's connected to the human body. If the thing the old forces set up early on isn't destroyed, it will keep moving and functioning. That's the reason it has not yet breathed its last and gone down to hell. ■

But why is it like this? As you know, the old forces' goal is to test Dafa disciples by having these clowns stage this persecution, isn't it? They think, "The test of Dafa disciples isn't over yet. Those students who have not yet stepped forward should be doing so continuously, and you have let those who haven't done well, do well." If we're going to talk about hindering the Fa-rectification's progress in this world, well, these students really are slowing it down. If [I] don't look after these people they will be destroyed and utterly finished, but they made vows in the past, and a being can't be judged based on one lifetime only, and should instead be judged comprehensively based on what has happened over time. So how could they not be looked after?

Question: Dafa disciples from Qingdao city, mainland China send their greetings to Master!

Teacher: Thank you. The rampant evil there doesn't have much time left.

Question: Will music in the future be developed based on music from the Tang Dynasty?

Teacher: Human society has gotten to where it is today, and it won't work to try to completely adopt any form from history. Mankind has, after all, reached the point where it is now. If mankind were to return to a human way of life or the way of life in ancient times, well, that would now be a very difficult adjustment. Even during the period when the Fa rectifies the human world, it will be only the complete, true picture of society that is displayed. In the future, only when the next cycle of humankind begins, will it be possible to start anew and return to a human path.

³ Referring to withdrawing from the three Chinese Communist organizations: the Party, the Youth League and the Young Pioneers.

Question: All Dafa disciples from Chengde city, Hebei province, send their greetings to Master! (Teacher: Thank you.) All of the Dafa disciples are missing respected Master, will steadfastly walk well the final path of validating Fa, and live up to Master's merciful salvation.

Teacher: I know that the Dafa disciples in mainland China will do well, and everyone has seen this put into practice—[they] have become increasingly mature and done better and better. Cultivation, as I have said before, is like great waves sifting sand—what's left will be gold, and gold is indeed gold.

Question: In terms of the elimination of karma that we do when we send forth righteous thoughts, is that primarily referring to thought karma or does it include all karma in the body?

Teacher: Sending forth righteous thoughts, during the part when you're focusing on yourself, is not aimed at eliminating karma; it's to eliminate the elements that interfere with the righteous thoughts in your mind. In fact, sending forth righteous thoughts, strictly speaking, does not put much emphasis on karma itself, and it's even unnecessary for cultivators to send forth righteous thoughts directly toward karma. Cultivators have very little karma, and some karma is placed at various critical junctures and used for you to break through tests and improve yourself. Sending forth righteous thoughts is mainly to eliminate the interference in your mind, to enable you to target the evil persecution with a clear mind and stronger righteous thoughts, and to eliminate those wicked specters in other dimensions. To give you a sense [of what you are dealing with], after the evil Party's wicked specters and evil dragons are destroyed and broken apart, they turn into fragmented, deformed evil beings. Then after large quantities of those beings are eliminated, the few that remain, combined with the rotten demons that have not been completely destroyed and that are pressed down [here] from different dimensions, meaning the bad things that those wicked factors brought over—what I call "rotten demons," and which are truly deformed, very low, and even very filthy beings—are participating in persecuting Dafa disciples and interfering with Fa-rectification. Then of course, when I refer to evil beings in general, that includes the Fa-defying gods that have snuck into the Three Realms, gods that are interfering with Fa-rectification and that have turned bad, the old forces, and some interfering factors that the old forces arranged. Within this material dimension, originally there were also some wicked specters that interfered with Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples, and though there are but a few of them left, those are all still causing interference. Regardless of how their actions manifest, whether beings interfere with Fa-rectification by upholding the principles of the old cosmos or simply are evil, as long as they play a negative role in Fa-rectification and toward Dafa disciples, they are all what I call "the evil." Since the cosmos is changing and innumerable sentient beings are to be saved in the process of such a huge cosmic body being changed, any beings that come to interfere are committing a heinous and unpardonable sin.

Question: Please talk about some disciples' laziness and their desire for the good life.

Teacher: Ordinary people want a life in this world that is filled with wealth and power and that brings honor to their ancestors, so that they can stand out and strut around in pride. This is what humans are after. When they die they will have to go down to hell to pay for the karma they incurred, and this is the cycle that humans go through of accumulating karma and paying for it. As cultivators, you are not after these things. Not going after these things, though, is not a simple matter of saying so and having that be the same as cultivating. You need to be able to put it into practice during cultivation. Though you won't be able to completely get to that point for now, you need to make a diligent effort towards it and try your best to improve. Some students forget that they are cultivators and become unhappy as soon as they run into anything troublesome. Some students become unhappy whenever they encounter conflicts or emotional turmoil. In that case, are you still cultivating? Cultivators look at things in just the opposite way. They see tribulations and suffering as good opportunities for improvement. [To cultivators] these are all good things, and the more there are and the faster they come, the faster the improvement. Some cultivators want to push them away and think, "Don't come." Whenever [conflicts

and turmoil] come up they think that others have a problem with them and they can't stand it when others say anything negative about them. You just want to live a more pleasant life, but is that cultivation? Can you really cultivate that way? If to this day you still can't come around on this concept, then as your master, I don't know how you will ever move towards Consummation. Since you seek to live comfortably, well, you can go right ahead with that. Master won't say anything when an ordinary person pursues a life of comfort. That's because no one can say that it's wrong for an ordinary person to seek to live comfortably; a human goes about his life with such pursuits. That's what human society is presently like. Master doesn't want to say anything about things of ordinary people right now. But as cultivators, you can't see things that way.

Question: It has been a year since the publication of the Nine Commentaries, yet only 5.3 million have quit from the Communist Party. How can we help more of the world's people quit the Party?

Teacher: Think about it, everyone, what will happen if a huge number of people quit the Party? If all of a sudden tens of millions of people quit the Party, the wicked Party would cease to exist just that quickly. But the evil elements arranged by the old forces are interfering, and they want to sustain the so-called conditions for testing Falun Dafa disciples. They won't consent to that many people quitting the Party all at once. The evil doesn't dare to interfere in this very weighty matter where people are making a choice that determines their survival or destruction, but the evil elements are interfering with message transmission and reception capacity. That means each day, whether the medium is phone calls, e-mails, or information relayed by people who have traveled outside China, only so many requests for withdrawals can be received via the various information channels. And communication channels are not the only problem. There are many people in mainland China who want to quit the Party but can't find a means to do so, and can't find people to file their requests. This is why the number of people who ask to quit the three communist organizations each day is kept at this level. Otherwise, the number would be very large, and once there are a lot of people [quitting], it will pose a very serious threat to the evil.

As you know, the surge of people quitting the Party since the *Nine Commentaries* was published is a matter of people choosing their futures, so everyone has to take a stance. What will happen as more people quit, you wonder? Because the *Nine Commentaries* is being spread more and more widely in society, its influence is growing. As soon as the wicked Party started interfering with Fa-rectification and persecuting Dafa disciples, Heaven decided to weed out the wicked Party. There was unanimous agreement among both gods who play a positive role and old forces who play a negative role. It was only that some bad elements insisted that it be used to test Dafa disciples, and they didn't want it to be weeded out immediately; however, it will be weeded out for certain. At most it was meant to play its so-called role of testing Dafa disciples during the process of it being weeded out, the idea being that those students who hadn't done well would be given another chance to temper and improve themselves, and make it through in terms of understanding. If the evil specters all vanished instantly, the wicked Party would immediately fall apart, and then who would dare to persecute Falun Gong? Who else has such nerve? (*Master smiles*) So wouldn't the Dafa disciples who haven't done well be out of chances, then? It is true that Master does not acknowledge the persecution, but things have gotten to where they are today and the persecution has, after all, happened. Besides, there are so many Dafa disciples who have done very well and come through. But as for those who have gone over to the opposite side and written something for the evil, what can we do about the stain? What can we do about those who had earlier benefited from Dafa and then didn't validate the Fa during the persecution? They have to be given a chance, right?

The continuing growth in the number of people quitting the Party is the process of the wicked Party crumbling. Before long, a phenomenon will appear in Chinese society: when a group of people are

sitting in their office, or they are in their factory or a store, or they are sitting around a dinner table, or even as they are entertaining friends at home, their conversation will go something like: “Have you quit?” (*Audience laughs*) “Yeah, I quit a long time ago.” “Oh, why didn’t you tell me when you quit the Party?” (*Audience laughs and applauds*) Think about it, everyone, when Chinese society gets to this stage, will the wicked Party still exist? The bad people think that they will be fine since they have the supposedly powerful tools that go with dictatorship. The evil will continue to disintegrate imperceptibly, and the wicked Party will be helpless in the face of the people’s choice. In fact, prior to July 20, 1999, I said in my open letter to them that the persecution would cause them to lose the public’s faith. In fact, when the number of people quitting the Party hit 5 million, the foundation of the wicked Party was uprooted. So when the number of people quitting the Party reached 5 million, the members of the CCP, from top to bottom, no longer had confidence in the wicked Party. (*Audience applauds*) That was because they know that nothing could revive this wicked Party when it is on its deathbed. No one has a way to do that. (*Audience applauds*)

Question: Ordinary people say that the Olympic games will give China a chance to shine on the world stage, and after that the wicked Party will collapse. What should we make of that?

Teacher: Ordinary people can say whatever they wish. Well, the Olympics are a few years away, so it’s questionable whether the wicked Party will make it that long. And whether or not it will be given a chance to shine is not up to humans. Human society wasn’t created for it. What’s there to shine, anyway? You know, before there were people who fretted about what would happen to China if the wicked Party fell—a laughable thought instilled by the wicked Party’s culture. When the wicked CCP disintegrates, won’t China still be China? Of course, there are very few people who are still holding on to that concern now. People now are actively thinking about things and know that the wicked Party is doomed. The Chinese people are now talking about how to stabilize Chinese society when the wicked Party falls. This is what people are saying now. People’s mindsets and way of thinking are changing. Think about it, everyone. China is China, and it has had five thousand years worth of civilization. When one dynasty is gone, is it necessary to worry that a new one won’t take its place? When gods want something to fall into chaos, it will surely do so, whether [the people within] it want it to or not; when gods don’t want it to fall into chaos, it surely won’t be chaotic, even if [the people within] it want it to be so. (*Applause*)

The wicked Party is attaching itself to the ideological system of the Chinese nation, to human bodies, and to Chinese culture. At the same time, it is undermining Chinese culture and persecuting the Chinese people. If the wicked Party crumbles and its evil specters are all destroyed—as if it suddenly evaporated in the human world—won’t China still be China? (*Applause*) Moreover, if the Chinese people and those in power can truly realize the evil of the wicked Party and consider what’s in the nation’s best interest, then that society will surely make a stable transition. But of course, these are just words, and as to how it’s going to go, it won’t be driven and directed by human will—gods have *their* arrangements. (*Applause*)

Question: Respected Master has talked about fine arts and music, so do the Truth-Compassion-Tolerance Art Exhibitions and New Year’s Gala have far-reaching significance?

Teacher: No matter what talents Dafa disciples have and no matter what aspect of culture these involve in human society, these are talents that humans possess. This is how it should be understood at the moment, at least. Dafa disciples are using their unique strengths as they validate the Fa. These are things Dafa disciples should do, and it can be said that they are making the most of their talents to do what Dafa disciples should do, so that is a great thing. In fact, isn’t this the case with everyone? Those of you who are good at computers are breaking through the Internet blockade and clarifying the truth online, and of course there are those with other talents. It’s all the same. Those who really don’t have

special talents are handing out flyers on the streets, and the mighty virtue is the same. No one will fail to reach a high realm in cultivation because society doesn't consider what he or she does scientifically or technologically advanced. That's impossible. (*Applause*)

Question: Our media has highlighted ancient prophecies that said the CCP would die in the Year of the Rooster and similar things. But everything is changing during Fa-rectification. If what happens does not match up with the prophecies, will that damage the reputation of our media?

Teacher: As for the reputation of our media being damaged, well, there's not much to say about that. But [I do want to say that] media is just media, these things aren't some sort of Ultimate Truth, and Dafa disciples shouldn't get too attached to them. Some people are always attached to what prophecies have said and why it didn't happen that way. They've begun to take these as the Fa. Don't forget that since the start of Fa-rectification, everything has had to be determined by what the future needs, including what process the Fa-rectification itself goes through. Prophecies can be used only when they are conducive to saving sentient beings. There are also people who say, "Something Master said seems to mean such and such, but why didn't it happen when the time came?" [People who feel that way are] actually all just speculating. Isn't an attachment to time an attachment? Only when you cultivate without any omissions or gaps is it the best cultivation. Dafa disciples are to do what Dafa disciples are supposed to do, openly and with confidence. When you [are able to do that] and have no thoughts of being dependent on other people or things, the evil won't dare to exploit your gaps, and bad things will flee at the mere sight of you, because you have no omissions that it can exploit. When the evil can persecute students, isn't that because it manages to exploit the students' gaps arising from their attachments? Isn't that why it can persecute students in the first place? This includes some students feeling physical discomfort, even to the point of having seemingly serious conditions or in some cases even passing away prematurely. There are factors arranged by the old forces at work there, but there's also an element of the students themselves not acting so righteously. If [you] act in a truly righteous manner, nothing will dare to lift a finger against you. (*Applause*) It's easy to say, but for cultivators, it is very tough to do as you cultivate, and Master sees that. But there is a point I want to make: No matter what, have righteous thoughts and act righteously, and there will be no test that you cannot pass. Even if things do get very grave and you don't know where your own problem lies, you can't be without righteous thoughts. No matter what the circumstances, your fundamental faith in Dafa cannot waver, because when [your faith remains strong], even if you can't fully understand something or you haven't done something well and didn't pass a major test, or even if you lost your human body and left this world, you will nevertheless achieve Consummation. (*Applause*) That's because Master does not acknowledge this persecution, and that thing was done to you by the persecution. So you must make sure to heed this. At that moment, if you suddenly switch sides and turn bad in that instant, then everything of yours might be finished. Your righteous thoughts must be strong enough, and even when you haven't passed a test well, you cannot waver on the most fundamental issue. Dafa disciples, let me tell you about a principle. If an ordinary person can do Dafa disciples' things during this time when Dafa disciples are persecuted, this person will become a divine being for sure, even though he is an ordinary person who hasn't cultivated. (*Applause*) You have done so much, and if it is a matter of one or two tests or a big ordeal arranged by the old forces not being overcome—if that's all—it is only a matter of the level of your Consummation, not a matter of whether you reach Consummation at all. (*Applause*)

Question: Is Lei Feng⁴ a product of the evil Party's culture? Can he remain in Zhuan Falun?

Teacher: The evil Party has attached itself to the Chinese nation and Chinese people's bodies and

⁴ A soldier and moral exemplar widely promoted by the CCP in the 1960's.

culture. It is using Chinese people and Chinese culture to do harm to the Chinese people and their culture. Lei Feng actually has a subordinate soul that is a pratyekabuddha (*self-enlightened one*). Of course, this is the situation of divine beings in the old cosmos. As far as how he'll be positioned in the future, that is something that belongs to the future. How far back his relationship goes and what kind of direct connections he has with the evil Party will be seen in the future.

Question: Can we read Zhuan Falun out loud and broadcast it via the radio station? For fifteen minutes per week?

Teacher: It is not that you can't broadcast it via radio, but it seems that the timing isn't quite right yet. Programming needs to be based on what today's audience likes to watch or listen to, and [what you proposed] is doable only when people have widely understood Dafa. Currently, only when your programs suit the taste of the audience will you have more listeners. And only after that happens will you be able to achieve the effect of clarifying the truth and saving sentient beings. If content related to Dafa takes up too much time, ordinary people who don't practice cultivation will not find it interesting. The inner meaning of Dafa can't be put out there for ordinary people so casually like that, so broadcasting it that way will not be effective. Shouldn't saving people be done with wisdom? When people have a certain level of understanding about Dafa, it might be acceptable to do that. At this stage, the timing doesn't seem very appropriate.

Question: Did Fa-rectification begin a very long time ago?

Teacher: It started two years before I began teaching the Fa. But some students have seen that it began in the distant past, tens of thousands of years ago, tens of millions of years ago, or even beyond that. Can that be the case? Yes. That's because the time here is different than the time there. Here, if I started something a second ago, over there it has already been a very long time, perhaps ten thousand years. So far we have seen sixteen years pass. In some dimensions millions of years have passed. That's the idea. There is this difference in time.

Question: Right now, many students are acutely aware of colors. Master, please talk a little about the colors red and black.

Teacher: In the cosmos, darkness normally suggests negative beings and dimensions; particularly in lower-level dimensions a dark appearance generally signifies a negative being. Of course not every case is like that. For example, some Daos wear black clothing. As a matter of fact, though, negative beings indeed like darkness, and they also like irregularity. However, as for those negative beings, regardless of which dimension they are from or even if they are demons, or whatever kind of beings they may be, if they don't get involved in damaging Dafa and don't affect the matter of Fa-rectification, they are not beings to be weeded out during Fa-rectification.

It is necessary for negative beings to exist in the cosmos. If everything in the cosmos were positive and every realm was positive, then positivity would cease to exist. Of course, where Buddhas are, there are definitely no beings as filthy and bad as those on earth. At their realms, both positive and negative beings exhibit themselves, but the realms of those negative beings are also at those same levels. At lower levels, the not-so-good beings look even worse, while the good beings are not as good as those at higher levels. This is caused by the difference in realms. If there were no negative beings in the cosmos, think about it everyone, if the entire cosmos were positive, then what would being positive mean? No one would understand what it means to be positive, since there would be nothing to compare to. If everything were good, then where would you find the bad? Because they have bad things to compare with [good ones], people can understand what is good and what is bad. Because of the evilness of demons, people have come to know what the benevolence of Buddhas is. Just as I have said before, tribulations will bring about this state of mind in beings: only after putting forth great effort will

people come to understand the pains required to achieve something, and consequently feel happy to have it. And during the process, the vitality and brilliance of sentient beings and the universe will be manifested. That's how things truly are.

Also, as you all know, the evil Party has manifested itself in this human world as idolizing the color red and has made it the symbol of the wicked Party. In the heavens, its original image is a red, evil dragon. That's why here on earth right from the start it began establishing red regimes, red revolutions, the Red Army, the red revolutionaries in the Cultural Revolution, the Red Guards, red armbands, red collar badges, red flags, the five red stars, big red lanterns, huge red pillars, red walls—in any case, everything is red. The evil Party calls it a “new world filled with red.” It's really scary to human beings, though—a world filled with red. And now today when the evil Party is about to utterly collapse, look at what the evil Party is putting on stages for performances: red curtains, red lighting, red costumes, red sets—my goodness, the whole stage is filled with red. If it's not huge red lanterns, then it's red flags filling up the stage. I generally refer to it as “evil Party red.” Bright red, from an aesthetic point of view or from the perspective of what it usually signifies in society, should be used only to complement and enhance, not as a base color. You can't use big blocks of red as the backdrop, because if you do that, all the other colors can't stand out. That's why the color red should be used only to complement and enhance. Then why does the evil Party so idolize red? It is in fact a reflection of its worship of blood and of its need to satisfy a bloodlust. The evil Party culture openly admits that the red flag was dyed with blood. The evil Party wishes the streets were awash with people's blood. Many people are actually disgusted by the way red is being used. Some students sitting in the audience here are wearing red, but of course, there is no element of the evil Party there, as you are Dafa disciples. There's a purpose behind the “evil Party red” being used even more rampantly now. Right now, the way it is being used in movies and on stage has reached a mad, incoherent level. If you haven't noticed, you can take a closer look at its programs. They're doing that because few evil spirits and beings remain and the evil is about to fall, so it is trying to fill their ranks and bolster their nerve.

Question: I find some of my fundamental attachments to be very stubborn, and they have affected my improvement and saving sentient beings. I ask Master in my heart to remove those stubborn parts of my being and recreate them.

Teacher: Master is actually taking care of everything. If you don't resist it or don't handle things with righteous thoughts, but instead often let attachments guide your behavior, then that's not cultivation. How can it be right to ask Master to do everything! If I were to recreate you, you would really be recreated, and it would not be completely you. That's why you have to cultivate yourselves. The Fa-principles are all laid out there. Why is it that others can achieve that, but you can't? Study the Fa more, and take a look at some of the articles on Clearwisdom that students publish to share with each other. They are truly wonderful, and indeed very mature. Some of the articles were really well written. Compare yourselves with those and see where you fall short. You have to walk your own path. Otherwise, when you ascended to the heavens, others would question you, saying, “How did you get up here? Which part is a result of your own enlightening? You weren't able to overcome even such a major problem, and only after your master removed it did you make it through. You can't say that you were cultivating. You didn't cultivate your way up here. Isn't that so?” You wouldn't feel comfortable staying up there and would go down. (*Master laughs*) And do you think you could cultivate again once you went back down? Don't miss this predestined chance. What's so hard about it? Think about it, [and you will see that] this is about not cherishing enough your predestined opportunity to cultivate, about not cherishing the Fa enough, and not cherishing your own life enough. When you truly understand these things, you will do well.

Question: Disciples outside of China attained the Fa abroad because they have their own special

mission. Now that all the Dafa disciples are involved in media work, is it true that more disciples should come out and join the media work? According to my understanding, overseas disciples should all be doing media work.

Teacher: Who told you that? (*Audience laughs*) What I was just talking about was how Dafa disciples are all validating the Fa according to their own strengths. When it comes to doing media work, if you can write, know how the media works, or can sell advertisements, or you can do other supplementary work for a media outlet, that means you have the right skill set to do media work and you can go right ahead. Isn't everyone putting his own abilities to use and finding the right spot to validate the Fa? You aren't all doing the same thing. I just talked about this, right? [Didn't I say] that the Great Way has no form, and everyone is proactively validating the Fa within his own social stratum and profession using his own unique strengths?

Question: When we study the Fa with little disciples, is it okay to skip the characters that they don't recognize?

Teacher: They can ask about the characters they don't know and inform each other. If none of the children recognizes the word, then it's not a problem to skip it—they can ask the adults about it later, and there is a process there. When they run into a word that they don't recognize, if they then stop the study for the day and wait [to study again] until they ask and find out what the word is, that won't do.

Question: Did the evil specter of the wicked Party exist on the previous earth?

Teacher: No, it's just a recent product of this earth. The old forces feel that it is quite an achievement to have sustained the evil Party for the hundred-plus years since its creation. That's because it is against the cosmos, and beings throughout the entire cosmos are enemies of it and want to eliminate it. Some people think that the United States and Western society want to defeat the evil Party. That's not human beings' wanting to defeat the evil Party: that is cosmic forces manifesting in this human dimension. Human beings themselves, though, are also against the things such as violent revolution and class struggle that the evil Party advocates.

Question: What do the other dimensions of non-cultivating ordinary people look like?

Teacher: Why do you care about a non-cultivating ordinary person's state? It's hard to say whether they even have other dimensions. Many people destroyed them when doing bad things. Some have them, some no longer do.

Question: I am a Taiwanese Dafa disciple living in North America. Taiwanese Dafa disciples send greetings to revered Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. (*Applause*)

Question: Can the students who petition in front of the Consulate in San Francisco distribute the Nine Commentaries to people, Chinese and non-Chinese, visiting the Consulate?

Teacher: They certainly can. As we are talking about the *Nine Commentaries*, I want to talk with you about this a little bit more. When the *Nine Commentaries* came out, some people said that you were getting political, and some students who had fear acting up in their minds shared the same view. But what's there to be afraid of? If the *Nine Commentaries* were not something Master asked to have done, could Dafa disciples have done it?

You know the purpose of distributing the *Nine Commentaries*, right? Since the day the persecution started, Dafa disciples all over the world, including those in mainland China, have kept writing to the evil Party's central government. Each of the seven members of the Politburo Standing Committee, including that archfiend, have been burning a huge number of letters every day. The archfiend has

burned a bin of letters each day. We clarified the truth to it and asked it to stop the persecution, yet it insisted on continuing the persecution. In the end, it still launched this persecution on July 20, 1999. Even with that, I still gave it chances. We clarified the truth to it again, and while we were being persecuted, we gave it another year. The letters addressed the impact that the persecution would have on [the archfiend] itself, on the nation, and even on the evil Party. Things were explained very clearly, but it still kept on with the persecution. In other words, the persecution did not stop even after one year of persuasion. It still kept up the persecution. Then Dafa disciples told the world that it was the archfiend who was single-mindedly, obstinately using the evil Party's power to persecute Falun Gong students. That clown really thought it was emperor. Its jealousy, twisted mindset, and irrational rage led to this persecution. We then exposed it before the people of the whole world and let the whole world know about that clown who had lost its mind. When the persecution still continued, we brought lawsuits against it around the world. Though it is so vicious, it's actually very cowardly. When it saw disasters looming right in front of it, it got scared to death. But the evil specter of the wicked Party and bad, chaotic ghosts and beings controlled this buffoon, who was in a situation where it was impossible to back down gracefully. To continue to persecute Falun Gong students they took advantage of its vile thoughts. And the persecution still didn't stop. Dafa disciples then further exposed it and sued it on a larger scale all over the world. After that it could no longer show its face. No other country's leader anywhere in the world has been so disgraced. In the history of China, there has never been an emperor whose evil deeds were exposed by the people so thoroughly during his reign. The actions arising from that twisted mind have really disgusted the world's people. Regardless of how bad the first Qin Emperor may have been, people talked about and judged him only after he passed away. No emperor has been completely exposed like this while still in power—exposed, that is, to the point of being putrid and untouchable. Leaders in many countries are talking about it, believing it to be mentally ill and irrational, a mentally deficient fool.

Cultivators are on a journey to divinity. They don't see any human beings as their enemies, and they try their best to save all sentient beings. Even if a person has become so bad that he can no longer be saved, we still won't allow him to continue carrying out persecution. As you all know, it was removed from power during the periodic change of government officials. The truth is that it had gotten too crazy and out of hand, and the old forces made it step down. The old forces know that it was afraid of being held accountable for the bad things it was doing, and it therefore placed its own people at high levels of the evil Party. The old forces thought that this way they could balance the power just right. In addition, such an arrangement would allow the evil Party's factors to come to the surface. These [two things] have, after all, been using each other all along. Given that, Dafa disciples are to expose the evil Party, helping everyone take a look at why the evil Party has wanted to persecute Falun Gong, what the evil Party is about, and what Falun Gong is about. All along Dafa disciples have been explaining what Falun Gong is, and now you will explain as well what the evil Party is about.

The reason for Dafa disciples to do this is not to overthrow the evil Party, and even less is it a plot to seize power. Dafa disciples expose it to help people see its true nature clearly and stop collaborating with it in the persecution of Falun Gong. (*Applause*) That is our goal. The Buddha Law is a serious thing, however; once a decision is made, once an undertaking is begun, it is to be finished. So, I knew that when the *Nine Commentaries* came out, once the true picture was shown to the world's people and the Chinese people, the evil CCP would for sure disintegrate. After all, the power of Buddha Law is at work. Of course, I have said before, and I wasn't joking: If the *Nine Commentaries* don't work, we have other means. (*Applause*) We will not resort to violence, and we will put to use every peaceful means there is to end the persecution. As the saying goes, "Buddha Law is boundless." If you don't believe it, just wait and see. (*Applause*)

Of course, the *Nine Commentaries* will be more than sufficient. (*Teacher chuckles*) Since the gods

decided to destroy the evil Party the moment it began to persecute Falun Gong, each Chinese person's belief or lack thereof in the evil Party has become something that determines whether he will be weeded out in the future. This is the role that the *Nine Commentaries* plays in truth clarification. The gods have seen that, and that's why all of the higher beings, positive and negative gods alike, regardless of their origin and purpose, all are using ordinary people to promote the *Nine Commentaries* in China. Those transporting the *Nine Commentaries* into mainland China are not limited to Dafa disciples; ordinary people, too, have been bringing in the *Nine Commentaries* in large quantities, some even in cargo containers. Also, many ordinary people are putting together and printing the *Nine Commentaries* in print shops. All the gods are doing these things. This means Dafa disciples are not the only ones playing this role in saving beings. Even ordinary people are doing it, many ordinary people. The evil Party has been persecuting Chinese people for so many years. During the years that it has been in Chinese society, it has, in the time since its founding, harmed more than two thirds of the Chinese people in its many political movements, and many hate the evil Party. For some in China it is a really burning hatred. Those people are doing it. The gods are using every opportunity to promote the *Nine Commentaries*. You'll see, soon it will be over for the evil Party. (*Applause*) These things are happening because whether people stay or go is related to whether beings at higher realms can stay, and those are enormous groups of beings. Moreover, it has a connection with almost all celestial beings, directly or indirectly.

Some people have asked, "Do people from other countries need to announce their withdrawal from the Party?" It's not a big issue for people from other countries. The evil Party in Eastern Europe crumbled because the people were against it. The people there already did what they were supposed to do. The Chinese people have not. The Chinese people must make that statement. By whatever means, you have to publicly announce that you withdraw from the evil Party. That's because for Chinese people, starting as a Young Pioneer in primary school, all the way to becoming a member of the Youth League and then a member of the Party, you have made pledges before the flag of blood. The pledges you've made are no simple matter. Gods consider those to be blood oaths. That's why Chinese people must clearly state their withdrawals; otherwise it doesn't count. You may say that you already withdrew in your mind a long time ago and no longer pay Party dues. No, that doesn't count. When you made that blood oath to the heavens before the flag of blood, an act directly witnessed by countless gods in the heavens, you said that you would dedicate your entire life and your being to the wicked Party. Having uttered those words and having made such a serious blood oath, now you want to take care of it so casually and perfunctorily? That's not acceptable. So if they want to make it to the next phase, Chinese people must publicly announce their resignations from the Party. They must take action to make the announcement, and it's not acceptable simply to take a stand without any action.

Question: We Vietnamese students are in the process of translating Zhuan Falun. We always feel that our translation isn't accurate, and this has gone on for over two years. Master, please give us some guidance.

Teacher: As far as translating *Zhuan Falun* goes, talk to students who did this with other languages and you may come to understand that to translate it perfectly accurately is impossible. Of course, if you used original, classical Vietnamese, you almost wouldn't need to translate it because at one time Chinese characters were used in almost all parts of Asia. But later when the French created those characters for the Vietnamese, it cut contemporary Vietnamese thinking off from its ancient culture. The modern-day Vietnamese people have indeed been affected in terms of their way of thinking. There is almost no inner meaning in the contemporary Vietnamese language, and that's why it is so difficult to translate it accurately. So you should just take the translation approach used by English and other languages. Do your best to express the surface meaning clearly, and that will be good enough. There's no need to translate the Fa-principles at higher levels. The Fa will display the higher-level inner

meanings, and that is the manifestation of the Fa's inner meanings at different realms.

Question: How should we handle the issue of investment versus speculation? I'm encountering this problem at work.

Teacher: If you are referring to doing this as a profession in human society, it's not something you can call a part of cultivation. Even though you are a Dafa disciple, your work in society isn't cultivation, but your cultivation will be reflected in your work in society. That's how they're related. Whatever your profession in ordinary society may be, you have to do it according to human society's rules and forms. That's how it works. As for the distinction between speculation and investment, it's a matter of the state of society. Our students should try their best to handle themselves well. If you feel there is a business prospect, an opportunity, then go ahead and do it. An investment opportunity is not necessarily the same as speculation; it doesn't necessarily fall into the category of speculation. That's because as the business world has developed in society, all the sectors seem to have been saturated, especially in recent times. So latecomers find it hard to establish a foothold, and when someone finds an opportunity, it's a business prospect. Things will thus work out fine if you have a clear understanding on issues like this. Work itself is not cultivation.

Question: I can't keep pace with Fa-rectification's progress and, of the three things, I haven't done well in clarifying the truth. I'm really anxious about this. I am working hard on studying the Fa and memorizing the Fa, though. Will I be able to have a rapid breakthrough? On behalf of Dafa disciples from Beijing's Fengtai District, I send our greetings to Master!

Teacher: Thank you all! If you haven't done well, try to improve gradually. It's good that you know you need to focus on it. There is no use in being anxious, and that's an attachment. Don't be anxious and just do what Dafa disciples should do. Look at how others are doing it and follow their lead. Gradually you will blaze your own path, and gradually you will be able to do it in your own way.

Question: Peruvian and Spanish-speaking students send their greetings to respected Master!

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*) Now the number of students in South America is gradually increasing and the more-veteran ones are beginning to mature. These are great developments. Dafa disciples have become almost the only hope for humanity in some regions. Even though on the surface society is still functioning and Dafa disciples seem to be going virtually unnoticed by the various industrial and professional sectors, that's not the reality. The divine beings and all sentient beings in the cosmos are watching. The positions Dafa disciples are in and the roles they are playing are both tied to the survival of humankind.

Question: In exposing the CCP's evilness, how can our media handle things well so that ordinary people can continue to accept and support us?

Teacher: You should remember that your righteous thoughts can change ordinary people and that you are not to be directed by them. If ordinary people say something or interfere with you, don't take it to heart, and just do what you need to do. The sources of human thoughts are very complicated, and in many cases it is people's notions talking, not their true thoughts or their true beings. So the things they say are often specious and not what they mean. They forget the things they just said right after saying them. They don't even take their own remarks seriously, so why would you? Don't worry about what they say, [but] every word that *you* say is like a thunderclap to them.

Question: A very small number of veteran students have for quite some time been doing Dafa work without studying the Fa or doing the exercises. If it keeps on like that long-term, are they cultivating?

Teacher: This problem indeed exists. Many Dafa disciples are shouldering several Dafa projects, and

things that validate the Fa do need to be done, so they don't have time to study the Fa or they have less time to study the Fa and do the exercises. They indeed can't continue doing this long-term. That's because we all know that, especially when it comes to the students in mainland China, whether a student can walk the path righteously and well under those circumstances is entirely contingent on studying the Fa well. If you don't study the Fa your righteous thoughts won't be strong; if you don't study the Fa the changes on the surface will be slow for you and your role in containing the evil in society will be weak.

Question: What's the old forces' situation like currently? Is their existence only for the sake of disciples' cultivation and sentient beings positioning themselves properly?

Teacher: To put it simply, they exist for the sake of their own existence. Everything they do is for the sake of their own existence. If they were to succeed in manipulating Dafa disciples, this universe would end up as if nothing had changed and remain as before. That's the situation. But that is not to be. The future doesn't acknowledge anything of the old forces, and the change is inevitable. The old forces' overall system has already been destroyed, since the Fa-rectification has destroyed it at the highest place. It's just that the things the old forces left in this world in the past are still having a superficial effect; the things that have not been destroyed are still functioning. As for what will happen to sentient beings, human beings in particular, the old forces couldn't care less.

Question: The beings and humans that haven't yet awakened will be weeded out. Will they have opportunities in the future to be saved?

Teacher: The beings that have not yet awakened still have time to do so right now, don't they? As for the future, we haven't set anything in stone. Dafa disciples should just go ahead and do Dafa disciples' things. If the beings that truly can't be saved are weeded out, well, that's not something to form an attachment about and that's what the Fa-rectification requires. When the enormous force of Fa-rectification comes, there won't be much fuss over this or that. It will be like things being wiped out, and it will be finished in an instant.

Question: It has been almost a year since the Nine Commentaries have been disseminated, and the number of people quitting the Party has stabilized at around 20,000 every day. If the wicked Communist Party collapses, does that mean that the time of Fa rectifying the human world has come?

Teacher: What you are asking is actually two questions. [You're saying that] the daily number of people quitting the Party is always 20,000, [and you are wondering whether] it could reach as many as one hundred thousand or 10 million a day. I addressed this question earlier.

If the wicked Party collapses, is that the time when the Fa rectifies the human world, you ask? That's still an unknown right now. If the wicked Party falls before the Fa-rectification of the human world begins, it will really lead to a period of modern society where there is no wicked Party. And with regard to China specifically, this will bring about some issues specific to a society free of the wicked Party. When the Fa's rectification of the human world does arrive, we will see the way of life for the next stage of humanity. You shouldn't be thinking about any of this right now, nor is it something for people to be concerned about. It's going to be a completely different state of human society. I will address this from another angle: it is an act of compassion for Dafa disciples to save all beings, and you are trying to save as many sentient beings as possible. If you are able to save half of the human beings, then Master will truly be happy for you!

Question: I have a question, Master. There are a few ordinary people in the Bay Area who actively undermine Dafa and are hostile to Dafa, which has negatively affected other ordinary people quite a bit. This is attributable to our local Dafa disciples not having done well. How can we do better?

Teacher: When the Dafa disciples' righteous thoughts are a bit stronger, everything will be changed by the Dafa disciples and the evil will be eliminated. Then what will the bad people amount to? Aren't those few bad people doing these things under the evil's control? When the evil is eliminated and you stand in front of that person, will he dare to say a single negative word [about Dafa] to you? Facing a god, he won't dare. (*Applause*)

Question: Master, please explain the connection between levels and dimensions.

Teacher: The breakthroughs in levels I talk about are breakthroughs in dimensions. Each level is a dimension, that's the idea.

Question: Our group has always had endless arguments over which approaches to take. One fellow practitioner thinks that the current approach has no future and is full of inadequacies, whereas his approach is better, has long-term benefits, and will save human and material resources. Could we ask Master to enlighten us on this with Fa principles?

Teacher: If Master's instructions are required for such specific things that Dafa disciples are doing, isn't that the same as me doing them myself? You'd be no more than one of my hands then, wouldn't you? I want you to have your own mind and your own body, and be a complete divine being. You need to do what *you* need to do, and when it comes to those things, you need to handle them, make judgments on them, and coordinate them yourselves. I'm confident you will do them well.

Question: Dafa disciples from the following places send their greetings to Master: Beijing's Fengtai District; Jiangmen city in Guangdong province; Chongqing city; Dalian city; Shenyang city; Zhengzhou city in Henan province; Shanxi province; Yunnan province; Guizhou province; Beijing; Jiangxi province; Xi'an city; Nanning city in Guangxi province; Shenzhen city; Hunan province; Lanzhou University; Guangzhou city; Shanghai; Shiyan city in Hubei province; Tangshan city; Arizona; Vancouver; Vietnam; San Diego; Harbin city in Heilongjiang province; Qiqihar city; Daqing city; Mudanjiang city; Xinjiang province; Tianjin city; Shijiazhuang city; Qingdao city in Shandong province; and Anshan city in Liaoning province.

Teacher: Thank you. (*Applause*) Recently some Dafa disciples from mainland China have come overseas and Master knows about that. I hope that you will still do a good job with what Dafa disciples should do, given your new environment. No matter where you are, you are always a Dafa disciple. (*Applause*)

Question: I've recognized attachments such as arrogance and jealousy in myself, so why haven't I been able to get rid of them even after a long time?

Teacher: If you truly take these things that seriously, you will be able to restrain them. Then you will be able to weaken them and gradually get rid of them completely. If it's a case where you are aware of it and feel anxious about it, but in practice you don't truly restrain and suppress it, then in reality you are just stopping at this mental activity of seeing and feeling something, but you haven't taken any action to suppress that thing. In other words, you have only thought about it but not actually cultivated and put it into practice. Another situation is one where you might say, "I have cultivated wholeheartedly and carried it out through concrete actions, yet this [problem] is still happening." That [occurs] because things developed over a long period of time have been separated into layers by factors pressed down here by beings from the old cosmos. So each time a layer is broken through, that layer is wiped out; then another layer is broken through and wiped out; and another is broken through and wiped out. In this way, they will become weaker and weaker, and there will be fewer and fewer of them. They won't be gone all at once, and this is what leads you to experience that [feeling you have]. The same applies to many other human attachments, the same happens with them.

Question: Would Master please instruct me on the difference between the mind being unmoved and being in a state of indifference, both of which I have experienced from time to time?

Teacher: In cultivation, different states will manifest, and sometimes it really is quite hard for you to distinguish among them. But usually the state of a very calm mind is such that it's still serene when faced with a lot of interference, and it is unaffected by ordinary human emotions such as getting excited, feeling wronged, etc. It is very calm, and it won't negatively impact doing the things that Dafa disciples should do. There is definitely a difference between that and the human state of feeling helpless, not wanting to do anything, and becoming numb to something after seeing it too often.

Question: Some students in our area have been investing in real estate recently, and doing so with good intentions. But I've continually felt somewhat uneasy about this, concerned that buying real estate now and waiting for the price to go up before selling is similar to gambling.

Teacher: It's not that serious. Doing business is just doing business, and it's fine for Dafa disciples to go and do it well. While we're on the topic of gambling, I want to talk to you about the issue of speculating in stocks. There are different kinds of stocks. Let's say that I buy a certain number of shares or invest a certain amount in a company. Taking on these stakes in a company is just a normal form of investment. Each month I might get a certain amount of profit from it and I haven't been making speculative investments on it based on its price fluctuations. That's not the kind of stock speculation that I have talked about before. What I have talked about is "speculating" in stocks—you should all remember this—it's "speculating" in stocks, meaning that you watch the price fluctuations every day and your heart is practically dragged up and down along with the price. (*Audience laughs*) How could you cultivate then? You couldn't. How could you cultivate when your mind is completely focused on your stocks? Your attachment would be so strong that you'd become even more ordinary than ordinary people. How could you be called a cultivator then? You definitely couldn't cultivate then, and that's what I was referring to. If each of you had a stake in some company and you didn't have to do anything but get money from it each month, and then you spent plenty of time doing things that Dafa disciples do to validate the Fa, I would be overjoyed! (*Applause*) That isn't what I was referring to when I discussed stock speculation. What I just spoke about includes investing in real estate, too. If you have an opportunity, then go right ahead, and there's no problem there. Of course you should wait until the price goes up before selling. However, sometimes you may not be able to pinpoint it so accurately. What if you fail, then? These are all ordinary people's things. It's about how you can handle it appropriately. These are matters of work in human society and work is not cultivation, but your cultivation will be reflected in your work.

Question: Master, please talk about how the various natural disasters happening in the world today are related to the progress of Fa-rectification.

Teacher: Discussing such issues is a sensitive thing for human society, so it's best that I don't discuss them; there would be no benefit to doing so. Take a look, though, everyone. Today's society is so complicated, people's hearts and minds have turned so bad, and mankind's morality and behavior are so bad—how could there not be disasters? There definitely will be disasters. But they're not completely aimed at sins committed in persecuting Dafa disciples, since mankind's karma is itself simply growing larger and larger. Of course, there are also elements at work here related to people's attitudes towards Dafa. In addition, the areas where disasters have struck are places where there are no Dafa disciples, and in mainland China they have happened in areas where the persecution of Dafa disciples is severe.

Question: I'd like to ask how the media run by us students in the western United States should validate the Fa and play a larger role?

Teacher: This question is too general. Dafa disciples: do well with what you should do. Each student

involved has the ability to proactively do well with what he or she should do; meanwhile, it is vital to have good coordination and cooperation so as to produce a larger effect and have greater results. The [media you run] will have succeeded when they are able to truly play a pivotal role in saving sentient beings.

Question: Disciples from Taiwan send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. *(Applause)*

Question: Disciples in southern Taiwan are preparing for the 2006 New Tang Dynasty New Year's Gala, which has aroused a great deal of interest in NTDTV on the part of the Taiwanese public. May I ask Master if the establishment of NTDTV in Taiwan is an arrangement by divine beings? Also, I'd like to ask Master to discuss the higher principles involved in the CCP's loss in the Eutelsat incident.

Teacher: These are all matters of New Tang Dynasty TV and do not have broader application. These things are excellent. As the Fa-rectification has reached this stage, let me tell you that at Master's side and at the sides of Dafa disciples are many upright gods, and a steady stream of gods is turning upright, which means that they have changed and will now have a positive attitude towards Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples. They want to turn around completely and help play a positive role, and this will constantly bring positive results.

The Eutelsat incident has been over for such a long time, so I won't talk about it. One thing is for sure when it comes to the wicked CCP: no matter what the wicked CCP does in persecuting Falun Gong, as soon as it does something, that thing will turn into a scandal and a failure. This has been set in stone by gods. *(Applause)* That's because history does not unfold for its sake, the old forces let it play a role only to test students, and *today's* history was specifically created for Fa-rectification and is unfolding for the sake of Dafa disciples.

Question: Is it all right to take selling ads for The Epoch Times as an occupation?

Teacher: If you can make a real living by selling ads, then go ahead and do it. That is an occupation, and there's no problem with doing that. [I say that] because the media outlet the students at the Epoch Times run is not itself cultivation; it is something that stands on its own in society and is a normal job. The same holds true with the companies that you run. Or let's say that you are running someone else's company, isn't going to work at someone else's company the same as going to work at your own company? That's the principle. However, your cultivation will be reflected in the work. On top of that, the media you're running was established by Dafa disciples for validating the Fa, so of course this is an especially good thing. If you are getting ads for it so that it will continue to go on, then aren't you doing your part for Dafa disciples' validating the Fa? Some people say, "I can save people directly by clarifying the truth to them. Today I convinced someone of the true situation through clarifying the facts. I feel so happy that this person has been saved." Well, as far as the media goes, there too you will have a part in the role it plays saving sentient beings. Let's say that one hundred people are involved in this media work, then if the media saved one hundred people a day, one of them was definitely saved by you. Newspapers are distributed every day, so there are definitely more than one hundred people [saved], right? Then haven't you saved someone each day? That's definitely the principle that is at work here, for you have worked together to keep the newspaper running, which means that you are clarifying the truth together.

Question: Some overseas democracy activists specifically asked me to relay their greetings to esteemed Master.

Teacher: Then I thank them. *(Applause)*

Question: They expressed their admiration for Dafa and Dafa disciples.

Teacher: Yes, sentient beings, no matter what you are doing today, didn't you all come for the Fa?

Question: I feel that the old forces arranged a lot of very bad elements at a certain university, and sometimes I feel as though things are really difficult. Is this because I haven't cultivated myself well, or is it perhaps just a feeling?

Teacher: That's not necessarily always the case. Let's put aside the old forces for the moment. The human society that you are dealing with has reached today's stage after going through a complicated process over the course of history. The ways of thinking are complicated, the state of society is complicated, and many things—including the righteous and the wicked, the good and the bad—are all mixed together. Faced with this kind of society and people, Dafa disciples need to cultivate themselves and save all beings, for what you face and what is put before you are only the hard things. Those are what you see today.

Question: Are the industrial and business sectors in the U.S. still being restrained by the old forces?

Teacher: I know what you're referring to, you are talking about how they go to China and keep on investing in and bolstering up the wicked CCP. I'd like to tell you all that Master is not against the Chinese nation becoming rich and powerful. I hope that the people there will become prosperous and be more civilized [in how they handle things]. What I am against is the old forces sending large amounts of money there during the persecution of Falun Gong and the evil using that money to persecute Dafa disciples. What I am against is their creating the opportunity for that to happen. Back when I started spreading the Fa I decided that China should become prosperous. During the years when I was spreading the Fa, the old forces stood in the way and didn't allow that to happen. When the persecution of Dafa started, they began to send money there and in large quantities, at that. When I didn't acknowledge what they were doing, they said, "Didn't you want it to become prosperous?" They were exploiting the loopholes in Fa-rectification, and, in reality, doing what they wanted to do. Even so, Dafa disciples have made it through. The positive factors are playing a decisive role and the evil's bag of tricks is no longer working. Think about it, everyone. The wicked Party is about to fall, and if China's economy crashes along with it, won't [it be the old forces] doing something bad again? They'd again be exploiting loopholes, right? These are the things they are doing. Don't worry about this for now, though. When the wicked Party vanishes, the Chinese people will continue to survive.

Question: How can the Chinese and English media outlets cooperate well with one another?

Teacher: The Chinese media outlets have been operating for such a long time now, so the media outlets in English and other languages can draw upon their experiences. As a matter of fact, the English media are making their presence felt right now. So far the situation with the newspaper is pretty good. There are difficulties, to be sure, but gradually things will get better and better. It is very important to have good cooperation. The students who distribute newspapers can deliver both papers at the same time, [for example]. Another example is having all of the Dafa disciples' news resources be shared. These are both examples of very good forms of cooperation. You should continue to improve the cooperation and coordination in other ways, as well.

Question: There are those among ordinary people who have realized that spreading the Nine Commentaries widely can disintegrate the CCP, but right now the daily rate of withdrawals from the Party is still only about 20,000. What should Dafa disciples do to improve? How can we have a snowball effect in terms of the withdrawals from the Party?

Teacher: I don't think it will remain that way forever. Changes will come as our own problems are resolved and as the effect of the *Nine Commentaries* increases. In reality, the evil and the bad people

have already lost their confidence. The CCP is like something rotten that's about to be booted out of China—it's already airborne from the kick, it has been uprooted and is on its way out. All of these things are changing along with the situation.

Question: How do we get all students to realize the importance of Sound of Hope's broadcasts into China?

Teacher: The wicked CCP considers Sound of Hope, New Tang Dynasty TV, and the Epoch Times its biggest concern. That's why they say that Falun Gong has three major media groups. They are referring to Sound of Hope, NTDTV, and the Epoch Times. You can tell that the evil is scared to death over Falun Gong. Indeed, it's not afraid of the United States, and even less Europe. It fears Falun Gong because Falun Gong knows what it's all about, more clearly recognizes its schemes, and knows how to make it crumble. *(Applause)* As long as it doesn't stop the persecution, we will keep at it until it crumbles. In fact, all Chinese people know how the wicked CCP is, and how those Party leaders that are manipulated by the evil think. But people who live in the Western world and have a normal mindset aren't aware of those things. They have no idea what the evil Party's culture is all about. That's why I'd say that if one day the evil Party suddenly disappears from China or falls, other governments will be clueless about how it happened. To find out what the evil CCP is about, you first have to learn how it looks at issues, how it thinks, and how it lies. If you don't have an understanding of even those most basic things, all the intelligence you gather will be wrong.

Question: Master, please kindly address those students who work at the English Epoch Times and tell us how to do better going forward.

Teacher: Whatever you do, initially you will always experience pressure and shortages in the three areas of human resources, material resources, and financial resources. In spite of that, you are Dafa disciples after all, and you have accomplished something ordinary people could not. Since you have started [this project], I believe that you will definitely do it well, for sure. As for how to do better, you need to put your heads together and blaze a trail of your own making. I look forward to seeing good news [of your progress]. *(Applause)*

Question: Since the Epoch Times became the platform and facilitator for the Nine Commentaries, I have felt even more deeply the great importance of running the media outlets well. Only with a stronger operational base will the Epoch Times have a stronger voice. Today, when I heard Master talking about how there are different forms of cultivation, I felt that the improvement of our professional skills is connected to improvement in cultivation. That applies to news writing, doing layout, handling accounting matters, etc. May I ask Master to give us more guidance on how to run the media and do better at it?

Teacher: Just as I said earlier, if you want to do better, you need to cooperate and coordinate well, carry out each task responsibly and attentively, and through your collective effort make that media outlet stand out. If all of you do well, the media outlet is bound to do well, and it will have a greater effect in saving sentient beings. However many people it saves, you have a share in that because it is your collective mouth, the mouthpiece of everyone involved in running the newspaper.

Question: Greetings to Master on behalf of Dafa disciples in Yunnan province of mainland China!

Teacher: Thank you. *(Applause)*

Question: I'm involved in a media project, and I often see that we lack resources, such as shortcomings in our standard operating procedures or being short of funding, and an inability to connect with more students so that more people can join in. We remain at the level of a workshop [rather than a major business]. How do we break through this?

Teacher: That is indeed the situation you are facing now. If you have strong righteous thoughts, cooperate and coordinate well, and walk your path righteously, everything will get better. Students in Mainland China actually have a much tougher time. Their materials production sites are basically at a household level, and they spring up everywhere. In other words, people walk their own paths. Each person, or some that are coordinating with each other on a small scale, is walking his own path. Didn't I say earlier that as far as our cultivation form is concerned, the Great Way has no form? This applies to the things that you do to clarify the facts. It's not like a situation where people go and do things under the direction and urging of some head assistant, not at all. Other than under special circumstances where you need to work with each other on something with the head assistant providing centralized coordination, each person should be taking initiative and walking his own path. If everything was centralized and done with everyone together, if everything was decided by the head assistant and everyone followed him and did the same thing, then whatever the head assistant cultivated into, you would become no more than sentient beings in his world. I don't want that for you. I want every Dafa disciple to become a king. Each person is to blaze his own trail, and each person is to validate and reach his own Attainment Status. *(Applause)*

Having said that, I want to remind all of you, this doesn't mean you shouldn't listen to anyone anymore now that Master has said you should all be walking your own path. When overall coordination is needed, you need to cooperate well. So, people in charge of different regions need to play their roles clear-headedly and rationally. Whenever necessary, you all need to work well with the coordinators.

Question: I work in a restaurant and generally spend little time clarifying the truth. I go to practice and help with the Epoch Times only on weekends. Am I considered a genuine, cultivating disciple?

Teacher: If on a day-to-day basis you can take advantage of the conditions provided by your job, or when you make contact with the world's people you still remember to clarify the truth and save sentient beings, and do what a Dafa disciple is supposed to do—if you study the Fa all the same and do all of the three things, you are a Dafa disciple. *(Applause)*

Question: Recently several older students in the Bay Area passed away one after another, and didn't manage to make it to the end. What will be the position they return to?

Teacher: I actually talked about this very early on, in *Zhuan Falun*. Some students aren't diligent, but the time they put in learning Dafa will not be in vain, and neither will the time they put in doing Dafa things. However much they did, that's how much they will receive. The exception is those who leave Dafa, particularly those who leave when Dafa is being persecuted; if they pass away, [what I described] does not apply to them. There is no hope there.

Question: I feel it's much harder to talk about the facts relating to the Nine Commentaries and the CCP withdrawals than earlier times when we clarified the truth about Dafa. I'm often afraid to talk about these two things at the same time. I don't know where I'm stuck.

Teacher: You are stuck because of your own understanding. You yourself haven't grasped why we are doing the *Nine Commentaries*, or at least you haven't understood it clearly. *(Teacher chuckles)* Why do Dafa disciples distribute the *Nine Commentaries*? You are thinking that talking about the *Nine Commentaries* feels like getting involved in politics, and that only talking about the other facts regarding Dafa being persecuted is actually addressing something related to Dafa. As a matter of fact, before, when you were [just] opposing the persecution and talking about the truth of Dafa, weren't there a lot of people saying that you were getting political? The purpose of your distributing the *Nine Commentaries* is to expose and end the wicked Party's persecution, rather than bringing down that wicked Party. As long as the persecution continues, Dafa disciples will keep distributing the *Nine Commentaries*, until finally the evil CCP disintegrates and the persecution stops. Doesn't that give you

just cause and full confidence [to do this]?

Question: Shanghai Dafa disciples send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. *(Applause)* When Shanghai Dafa disciples send their regards to Master, that archfiend squatting in its den in Shanghai gets terrified.

Question: Dafa disciples have a very weak sense for how companies spend money on advertising. Does that give the evil a reason to block our income?

Teacher: No, it doesn't. Let me tell you, *The Epoch Times* is already an influential media outlet in the United States. Everyone, no matter who it is, and especially Chinese people, wants to learn about *The Epoch Times* and to learn about the news *The Epoch Times* carries. Of course, along the way there will be people who resist it, but as we clarify the truth more and do so more deeply, many people change. The media outlet that is *The Epoch Times* has become the only multinational newspaper that spans the entire globe. That is already the case.

Question: I'm feeling more and more that there isn't enough time. Respected Master, how should we deal with this using righteous thoughts? Can we send righteous thoughts to prolong time? (Audience laughs.)

Teacher: That's difficult to do, and you aren't capable of it yet. That is because as Fa-rectification proceeds faster, time also goes faster. In other words, as Fa-rectification pushes forward more rapidly, celestial bodies correspondingly move and turn faster, as does the entire cosmos. That's why this is happening on such a gigantic scale. But regardless of that, because Fa-rectification has already taken that into account, all that Dafa disciples can do is their best. It's true that you will feel time is very short. Sometimes, you get up in the morning, get busy running around doing a few things, and it's dark before you know it. [You wonder,] how come there's so little time? That is indeed true. Humans don't have the ability to keep up because Fa-rectification is happening at a very high speed. Many of us remember that in the past, we always felt the day was very long. When I was little, I often heard others saying, how come it's still not dark yet? People were tired after working all day, and felt the day was so long and they were working all the time. Now it's different. Nowadays, people are saying that it's dark before they have a chance to do anything. That is the biggest difference that human beings can sense.

Question: I obtained the Fa in 1998, and this is my first time asking Master a question at an experience sharing conference. Master, I've done quite a few things over the past few years, yet I feel as though I don't have much to say when everyone is sharing experiences. Is that because I haven't studied the Fa well or because my righteous thoughts aren't strong enough?

Teacher: Perhaps that's a personality issue. If you don't have anything to say, then just spend more time listening. See if there are any gaps between you and the others and do some comparing. Sharing with each other provides an environment where Dafa disciples move forward and improve together. That little bit of time is the only time [reserved for that purpose] while you are cultivating in the human world, and it is the environment where Dafa disciples come together, a cultivation environment. You spend more time in ordinary people's society and cultivate in the human world, and you don't separate yourselves from the secular world. That's why that little bit of time is very precious and very limited for Dafa disciples.

Question: Article submissions over the Internet are being blocked by the evil, and they are controlling [access to] the websites. Can we set up another website in the United States? Master, please give us some direction on doing this, and especially on the idea of using them for articles from the Nine Commentaries that have been translated into other languages.

Teacher: Yes, you certainly can. You should think of ways to solve this problem. There are many websites out there today, and Dafa disciples are running quite a few. They are all having an effect.

Question: After the Nine Commentaries was published I did my best to distribute it. Around that time my wife brought a lot of tribulations upon me. I dropped down [in level] and had some pretty severe sickness karma. Now I occasionally have serious relapses [of the sickness karma], and I find it really hard to endure the tribulations my wife brings upon me. I want to overcome this trial as quickly as possible.

Teacher: Deal with everything you are faced with as a cultivator, and you will be able to overcome anything. (Applause) You should ask yourself: if a divine being were faced with this problem, how would he handle it? When you can't make it through, that's what you should be thinking. Just try to make it through and handle it that way, and see what happens.

Question: Do Western students living in the United States need to quit the Party?

Teacher: That's not an important issue. Certainly, many students are withdrawing, such as those from former Eastern European countries. Since they are Dafa disciples now, whether they withdraw or not isn't an important event in and of itself, but the psychological impact of their withdrawals on the evil CCP is quite significant.

Question: You just mentioned not talking at too high a level during truth clarification. Does that mean that in our media reports we should avoid using phrases like “the evil specter of Communism” and “gods want to eliminate the CCP”?

Teacher: That's not a problem, those things aren't too high-level. The reference to “the evil specter of Communism” is not too high-level. I have been bringing that to light and gradually giving a thorough explanation of the matter. The *Nine Commentaries* also mentions it. The talk about “gods wanting to eliminate the CCP” is also true and factual. When you talk about it, people will be able to feel that, as they have a knowing side. When I mentioned people not being able to accept it if you talk at too high a level, I was referring to things in cultivation, because cultivation principles are the opposite of those of human beings. While people feel that living a life of comfort is a good thing, cultivators believe that, for the sake of improving themselves, the opposite is a good thing. Isn't that an example of a righteous principle existing alongside a reversed one?

Question: How do we know about our grand historic vows? When I read Zhuan Falun and study the Fa, I can remember [what I'm studying], but once I turn around and become an ordinary person, I forget.

Teacher: When you become an ordinary person, of course you aren't supposed to know the Fa. You should instead say that once you make contact with ordinary society you forget that you are a cultivator. This is probably due to lack of righteous thoughts. It's not necessary for you to know that clearly about whatever grand vows you may have made in the past, nor should you be concerned about that. Today you are someone who has obtained the Fa and, being a cultivator, you should just do what's required of cultivators. You said that you can't remember the Fa that you studied—that's all right. Let's say you don't remember after the first reading and you still don't remember after the second reading, then put your heart into studying and you will definitely make a breakthrough. If you truly give your best and still can't recall it, then it is a test that has been placed in front of you. If that is not the case and your not remembering is caused by not paying enough attention, then the issue at hand is for you to become more diligent.

Question: Dafa disciples of Shenyang city give their best regards to Master. (Teacher: Thank you all.) Master said in Zhuan Falun that he would protect every disciple until a disciple has the ability to

protect himself. However, many disciples nevertheless didn't finish the journey Master arranged, and they were killed by the evil's persecution. Didn't those who are deceased cultivate in vain?

Teacher: If every Dafa disciple can think and act righteously as he goes about things and can look at things with righteous thoughts under any circumstance, none of you will become afraid when facing persecution. If that is how you are, who would dare to persecute you! If a person is completely in the Fa no one can touch him. Isn't that having the ability to protect yourself? As a matter of fact, with regard to the veteran students [that started] prior to the persecution, I raised all of you to your positions. As long as you can go about things with righteous thoughts and righteous actions you can protect yourselves perfectly well, and that applies as well for new students that joined later. It's just that some students simply don't have righteous thoughts. They have all the things in place, and yet when experiencing persecution they still look at things with a human mindset and still have a big pile of attachments. What is Master to do? Should I completely take over everything that you're supposed to do in validating the Fa? Then would it be you that's cultivating or would it be Master doing it? Let me reiterate: It is Dafa disciples, not ordinary people, that Master is protecting amidst the persecution.

I have explained these things very clearly in several Fa-lectures. If you are a student that just came from the mainland, seek out the Fa that I have taught in the past few years and read it, since it would take a long time to explain it all in detail. Many things are quite complicated. Elements of each individual's past, as well as elements arranged by the old forces, are of relevance here.

I've joked about this with you before, saying that all the famous and prominent people in the past were Dafa disciples. The Dafa disciples were so happy when they heard it, thinking, "We were all of those famous people in history!" Many of those historical figures took a lot of lives, though. Some Dafa disciples were bandits and robbers in history, and some even committed terrible crimes. Of course, Dafa disciples, since you are now cultivating, Master can harmonize and benevolently resolve those things, and take care of all of them. But cultivation is sacred, and it is serious. Master will benevolently resolve those things and has actually settled many of your debts for you; however, with such a major, major issue, in a life-and-death test, can the cultivators not be held to high standards? Those students who are not diligent will have a hard time making it through. Having such great debts, at life-and-death moments could you be allowed to make it through without righteous thoughts? When some of you mainland students were severely persecuted you reached a point where you no longer took yourselves as Dafa disciples. Your head was full of ordinary human thoughts. While being persecuted, you were attached to an ordinary person's life of comfort. Then how could you be treated as a divine being? How could those debts from the past be settled? Could you make it through the tests so easily? So there are many different reasons and various factors that you cannot look at in a human way, thinking things such as, "They cultivated for such a long time, and now haven't they all cultivated in vain? They were killed by the persecution, just like that? Isn't Master supposed to be protecting Dafa disciples? Where was the protection?" Yes, I do protect Dafa disciples. But, even when at the brink of death they didn't consider themselves Dafa disciples, nor did they remember that they still had me, their master. What was on their minds was: "If I die right here, what will my life have been good for? Who's going to take care of my children? Will my wife re-marry?" When they were being persecuted severely, they didn't call out to Master, instead they called out for their mother, or even yelled for Heaven and Earth. When I tried to stop the persecution, the old forces and the gods of the cosmos all said: "You have to be firm on matters of principle when rectifying the Fa. What Fa are you rectifying? Are you going to take unrighteous things and regard them as the righteous Fa? Is that *your* disciple over there? Look at him, does he consider you his master?" The more seriously the person was persecuted, the more his human attachments grew, instead of him becoming more steadfast as the persecution went on and having stronger and stronger righteous thoughts to resist the persecution. You tell me, what could be done? All the way until the time he was killed by the persecution, he never regarded himself as a Dafa disciple.

Fortunately, Master recognizes whatever Dafa disciples have done. After he is killed by the persecution, I recognize the fact that it was because he cultivated in Dafa that he was killed by the persecution. Despite the fact that he didn't do well in overcoming that particular tribulation, I won't let his cultivation be in vain. (*Applause*) That's why I have said that what awaits Dafa disciples, no matter what, is always the brightest and best future. (*Applause*) What you endured in the persecution does not compare in the least with what you will be given in the future. And it is true that the old forces exploited the gaps of some really good students and killed them through persecution. That happened in the Bay Area also, and it greatly pains Master's heart.

Of course, on this subject, there are many different factors. As long as someone can act like a divine being, nothing will dare to kill him through persecution.

Question: How should we look at giving gifts to the head prison guard in order to ease the suffering of relatives imprisoned for practicing Falun Gong?

Teacher: It can't be called some sort of major mistake. It's just that you should do your best to act a little more righteously and do a little better. If you could clarify the truth to that head prison guard with very strong righteous thoughts and get the message across to him, it would be much better than giving him gifts. But this is just talk, and when doing it like this in that kind of environment... the question is, are you going to have very strong righteous thoughts? Are you able to have really powerful righteous thoughts when placed under pressure by the evil? That's the big question. It is very hard, but when you turn it around and think about it, wasn't human history created for today? Isn't everything that Dafa disciples need to forge precisely about making it through all of this? So in order to go from being human to being divine, don't you need to make it through this way? (*Applause*)

Question: I'd like to send greetings to Master on behalf of all Dafa disciples from the 8th Platoon of the Liaoning Province Women's Prison.

Teacher: Thank you! The wording makes it sound as if the Dafa disciples are the "8th Platoon" of that prison, doesn't it? You should say, "Dafa disciples who are being persecuted by the prison's 8th platoon." It is not our "8th platoon." Dafa disciples don't acknowledge anything that was arranged by the old forces, and even less so do they acknowledge the wicked Party's persecution.

Question: On June 5th of this year, I read a group declaration from dozens of disciples at that prison, stating that they will firmly cultivate in Dafa and follow Master to the end. Master, please set your mind at ease.

Teacher: If those words had been said three or four years ago, I really wouldn't have been able to set my mind at ease, but now I *am* able to. (*Applause*) Back then it was unclear whether Dafa disciples would be able to make it through during this persecution, and unclear how many would be able to make it through. Even though gods were protecting them and Master was watching over and protecting them, while being persecuted could the Dafa disciples truly have righteous thoughts and righteous actions like gods? Making it through depends on one's own steadfast righteous thoughts and firm belief in Dafa. Master can take on the suffering for you, and I can even bear the pain in your place, but can you position your mind in a righteous way when under such cruel and harsh pressure? Are you treating yourself as a god or as a human being? Do you have ample righteous thoughts? All of these things depend on you, on you yourselves.

Question: Master, there is a trend whereby the differences among students' levels are growing, and some students are repeatedly being interfered with by sickness karma and have not been able to break through it over a long period of time. How can we better improve as a whole?

Teacher: I have talked about this many times before, and many students have actually understood it

already. When students exhibit severe sickness karma, it undoubtedly has two goals. One is to have that person display such a state and then see how people around him or her look at it. It's to see how and whether your minds are moved by it. Isn't that the case? If everyone is moved, thinking, "Whoa, he's cultivated so well, how could he be like this?" then attachments rear their heads and human thoughts surface. Some people think, "If even he has become this way, will I be able to make it?" All kinds of human attachments thus resurface. Then the old forces say, "I was right to have done this, wasn't I? The reason I had that person's sickness karma get so severe was to test whether they have righteous thoughts or human thinking. We did the right thing, didn't we? See, didn't those human thoughts of your disciples return? So many human thoughts have returned, so we need to target those human thoughts. We're therefore going to increase that student's sickness karma and see if all of you still cultivate."

No matter what happens, nobody should be affected inside. Each student should think only of giving help as a Dafa disciple as he's able, and there is nothing to get worked up about. Even if you can't help that person you should still face this issue with righteous thoughts. Continue to do whatever you are supposed to. Don't become attached to it by looking at it in a human way, don't make these problems worse in your minds, look very righteously at how it relates to everything else and don't think of it as being very important, and be very calm. The old forces will then lose interest, thinking, "These people aren't moved. If none of them are moved, what is the point?" They will then let the matter drop, and that person's sickness karma will disappear instantly. That's one scenario.

The other goal applies to that person himself: how well has the person who exhibits the sickness karma cultivated? Is he able to make it through with strong righteous thoughts while in such a state? Does he truly treat himself as a god and pay no attention to any of it whatsoever? Today I read a report on the Minghui website. A student was beaten so badly that her legs were smashed and broken into pieces, and they didn't set her bones before applying a cast. It never even occurred to the student that she would become handicapped because of this. She didn't pay any attention to it at all. She just studied the Fa every day, and her righteous thoughts were very strong. When she was able to sit up a little bit, she started to do the exercises. The doctors told her that her bones had been smashed and fractured in several places, and that the cast had been applied before the bones were set. It was all done by those people in the prison hospital. She didn't pay any attention to it and just told herself, "I want to cross my legs and do the exercises." She pushed herself and did it even though it was extremely painful to do. As time went by, she no longer felt any pain when she crossed her legs. The end result is that she has recovered. She can now jump up and down without any problem, and she's just like a completely normal person. (*Applause*) If any of you can conduct yourself like that, the old forces will absolutely not dare to touch you. Whoever can be like that will be able to make it through when encountering tests. What are "righteous thoughts" about? *That* is what righteous thoughts are about.

Question: Some fellow students say that the Nine Commentaries carry the power of the Fa. Is that true?

Teacher: It is true. As for the *Nine Commentaries*, well, everyone knows about clarifying the truth, saving sentient beings, and disintegrating the vicious Party's evil specter—aren't these things that Dafa disciples need to do while validating the Fa, and things that need to be done by Dafa during the Fa-rectification? Of course it carries the Fa's power. But you shouldn't study it as if it were Fa. (*Audience laughs*). It should be treated as material that helps one understand the evil Party. But those students who are confused on this front should read it more, as it will be beneficial. That's the situation with that.

Question: Some people who have come from Mainland China are very sympathetic towards and supportive of Falun Gong, but they aren't eager to withdraw from the Party. Other than giving them the

Nine Commentaries, what can we do to help them more effectively?

Teacher: Some people are beyond help. I just said something: if you were able to save half of the people, it would be a great success. In other words, there are many people that you can't save, many that can no longer be saved. That is reality. But you shouldn't stop doing things to save people just because of those who can no longer be saved. You should continue to do those things. Also, this affair has yet to reach the very end, and no conclusion can be drawn. It is still unknown whether a given life will have further opportunities or not. As the overall situation changes, he might change along with it. Right now these things are merely manifestations of what is happening in this process.

Question: Because of my attachments, I was taken advantage of by the old forces and the evil Party's wicked specter, and I fell out of the ranks [of Dafa disciples] for as long as one to two years. The old forces have made my doing the exercises ineffective, and all this time I have stuck it out. I think that through studying Falun Gong, doing well the three things that Master has given us to do, and keeping up with Teacher's Fa-rectification, I will definitely be able to make it through.

Teacher: Yes, that is the right track. Righteous thoughts shouldn't be mere lip service. Instead, righteous thoughts, righteous actions, and being diligent are in order. Falling out of the ranks for one or two years is not a short time. No matter what, though, since the persecution hasn't ended, chances abound right now for those who have not stepped forward or not caught up with the progress of Fa-rectification. Do as well as you possibly can. That's what you should do. You need to seize the day.

Question: Is it important for little Dafa disciples to read the Nine Commentaries?

Teacher: For little Dafa disciples in the U.S., studying the Fa is still more important since they haven't been poisoned and damaged by the wicked Party. Those in China are different—those in mainland China are different. For those in the U.S. it's fine to just study the Fa more.

Question: Some Dafa disciples are very attached to ordinary skills. Master, please tell us how to let go of attachments to those skills.

Teacher: If it has to do with someone wanting to do his job well, then it shouldn't be considered a problem. But if it affects Dafa disciples validating of the Fa, then the losses outweigh the benefits. It's just a matter of keeping things in the proper perspective so that you do well at your job yet don't let it negatively impact the things Dafa disciples do.

Question: One of the exercise verses has the words "Golden Monkey Splitting Its Body." Does it have a deep inner meaning? Is it a hint that Dafa disciples should have the ability to identify hidden evil? Dafa disciples in Guangzhou city ask that I send greetings to Master!

Teacher: Thank you! (Applause) Nothing in Dafa is simple and straightforward. Everything has its inner meaning, and everything can be used as a hint and a way to help Dafa disciples understand the Fa more deeply.

Question: Many students have recently started up businesses. Master, could you tell us if there is really an urgent need to do so? How should we balance these types of things [against what we are to do as Dafa disciples]?

Teacher: If a person had problems meeting the needs of a normal life and went about solving the problem, then there shouldn't be anything wrong with that. But no matter what, a person cannot forget that he is a Dafa disciple or forget to do the things Dafa disciples should do. Actually this issue is very simple.

Question: I would like to record the new scripture that you are giving and listen to it myself, is that okay? Can I turn it into a CD and let other students listen to it?

Teacher: No, you can't. Even just recording it and listening to it by yourself is not allowed. I have talked about this issue many times. Nobody can make his own recording at will, much less distribute it. That is why each time I give a talk I will edit [the transcript that is made] afterwards and then turn it into a book, and it is for this reason. I do this since what I say on a given occasion is intended for the students at that setting, and it doesn't have any direct bearing on other regions. After it is edited and turned into a book, however, it's a different matter as it then has broad applications. I thus need to make edits to the manuscript. Once it is published as a book, any differences that exist between edited places and the original audio/video recording will undermine the Fa. And those who undermine the Fa: Gods are watching your every action. In a little bit, you must turn all of those things in to the conference staff, videotapes included. You shouldn't do such things, and should pay attention to it! Ordinary people can't undermine the Fa. I've said that only when Dafa disciples themselves don't do well can damage occur. Some people say, "I have the audio of Master's Fa lecture at a certain place that nobody else has—I alone have a copy." He is quite pleased with himself, and it's a very bad state of mind. It is using solely human thinking to look at matters of cultivation, and in reality it undermines the Fa. It is an early indicator that a person is about to undermine the Fa. Once that thing is brought out, it will undermine the Fa, even though it is a speech given by Master. You know how using today's technology anything can be faked, sections can be replaced, and things like voice recordings can be spliced and put back together. Hasn't the evil Party done such things in order to persecute Falun Gong? Do you think that what you have is safe? Only talks that have been officially published on the Clearwisdom website or formally printed as books can be verified; nobody can undermine those. The old forces haven't gone after you yet, but when you approach Consummation and reach the final stage, they will definitely stop you on account of this. At that time it will be too late for regrets.

Question: The evil CCP manifests as a red dragon in the bottom dimension. Is it in the image of an Asian dragon or a Western dragon?

Teacher: It is in the image of an Asian dragon, but sometimes the image of a dragon in the West is used and can be understood by Westerners. It is a cultural issue and doesn't affect anything fundamental.

Question: Some students devote themselves entirely to doing things for Dafa. Some have encountered life-threatening danger. It might be because they neglected their own cultivation and didn't pass certain tests well. But precisely because they were still cultivators, they couldn't possibly pass every single test well. Why couldn't Dafa protect them?

Teacher: It seems you are demanding to know why Dafa didn't protect them. Each person's situation is very complex, and it's not the case that a person can pass every test with just that same, small amount of righteous thoughts. Some require quite a large amount of righteous thoughts to get through; some can be passed only after the attachment to one's life is cast off. What is cultivation? It is marching toward godhood! [Would it work if] Master bore everything for you, Dafa protected you no matter what danger you encountered, and you had an umbrella of safety over your head? If there weren't any tribulations at all, how leisurely that style of cultivating would be—who wouldn't cultivate? Things are in fact very complicated. Some students had agreements with the old forces dating back to prehistoric times, and in that case what can be done if he has to depart at a certain time? Some students never eliminated their fundamental attachments, and that is an issue of whether or not they are truly Dafa disciples at a fundamental level. Ordinary people too can do things that Dafa disciples do, but they can't be looked after as Dafa disciples. Some students' gaps were exploited by the old forces and they were unwilling to let go of their attachments, yet the test they faced might very well have been the great test of life or death. And in that case what could be done? Some students had reached the end of their lifespans but were not diligent, and in a few extremely rare cases [the students] had to depart a little bit early, to name a few examples. You absolutely must not look at cultivation with a human mentality!

I just said that the principles of cultivators and those of ordinary people are opposite. Human beings believe that a life of comfort is a good thing, while Dafa disciples believe that having everything be easy is a bad thing when it comes to their improvement and that discomfort is conducive to improvement. (*Applause*) Have you managed to turn around your fundamental concepts? When you meet with a little bit of hardship or a little something here and there, you can't make it through. And when eventually it accumulates to a very large amount, it becomes a major test, and that test is one you can't pass without letting go of [the attachment to your] life. What could be done, then? The tribulation could even become so great that you couldn't even things out even if you did let go of [that attachment to your] life. The old forces wouldn't let you make it through, and your righteous thoughts wouldn't be strong enough. You tell me what could be done. What would you have Master do? Master has been protecting you unconditionally, yet you are not diligent, even to the point of becoming like an ordinary person! You say, "I am a Dafa disciple," yet your thoughts and conduct are those of an ordinary person. It is Dafa disciples that I am bringing salvation to today, and I can't go and groundlessly protect an ordinary person. The "birth, aging, illness, and death" an ordinary person faces is a law mandated by the heavens, and it can't be meddled with without a reason. Do you know what Master is doing today? I am rectifying the Fa of the cosmos. How am I rectifying it? What am I using to rectify it? Can I rectify the Fa of the cosmos in an incorrect way? Unconditionally protecting an unqualified cultivator—is that being responsible to you? Is that rectifying the Fa of the cosmos? Why do Dafa disciples need to cultivate, pass tests, have strong righteous thoughts, and go through suffering? Only those things can be considered cultivation. In fact, cultivation is about coming here to suffer, not coming here to be protected in the human world. When one studies Dafa he will be protected, but cultivating Dafa also requires one to endure suffering. Some students say, "When we encounter danger, Master will protect us." And yes, that's true! There will definitely be protection when a person has righteous thoughts and actions.

Question: A minute before seeing revered Master today, a thought suddenly popped into my head, "Master has come, and he is onstage." Then I saw you, and I was so excited. My elderly mother who is ninety-five years old and illiterate chants every day, "Falun Dafa is good," "Zhen Shan Ren' is good," and "Master is good." She misses Master a lot.

Teacher: The attitudes that sentient beings have towards Dafa don't have to be as solemn as those of cultivators. What I just said, on the other hand, was very solemn. You are cultivators, so when you still don't see these most fundamental issues clearly, I have to put things to you in solemn terms. For ordinary people that's not necessary. They are only pitiful sentient beings and should be saved. You are to save others, and it wouldn't work if you failed to do well yourselves. Were that the case, you wouldn't be able to save others and would even fail to save yourselves.

Question: Dafa disciples from the Western region are deeply grateful to revered Master for appearing at the Fa Conference and giving a Fa lecture.

Teacher: Thank you all! (*Applause*)

Question: Those students who have been to New York feel that the pace of the activities that disciples in California hold to validate the Fa is not fast enough, yet disciples in California are very capable and are well off financially. How can Dafa disciples out West make the most of their strengths and be more effective in validating the Fa?

Teacher: Students just talked about people stealing our newspapers, about how the evil forces are really strong, and about how some people have been damaging the Fa. But I have noticed that the Chinatown area is a blank spot in your efforts to clarify the truth and validate the Fa. And yet that is the most, most important place in your region out West. For the most part you haven't paid much attention

to it. I walked around the area and didn't find a single copy of *The Epoch Times*. With things like this you should all be clear on what Dafa disciples are supposed to be doing!

Question: Is it a good opportunity for us to clarify the truth each time a high-ranking Chinese official visits another country?

Teacher: Yes, Dafa disciples have done things as circumstances have allowed, and you should act in accordance with the situation at hand.

Question: When Chinese officials visit the U.S., how far should we go with suing them?

Teacher: In the cases of those people who have persecuted Falun Gong severely and who don't show any remorse, once you have evidence you can go ahead and sue. Actually, though, suing these people is not the point. Suing them is done to have them understand that the persecuting they have done is not a bad deed that is over with once it's done: there will be a reckoning, and the evil persecution must stop. It is to have them understand that they shouldn't join in the persecution. You must be clear on this.

Question: Master, please talk a little bit about the matter of rescuing orphans.

Teacher: Rescuing orphans isn't something that should be done by our students, for this matter needs the U.S. government's involvement. Nor should it use up additional energy or resources. Rescuing the orphans is but one of the many things Dafa disciples are doing to clarify the truth, stop the persecution, and save sentient beings, and it isn't the biggest thing. Right now there are students working on it with the U.S. government.

Question: Recently some people have been passing around articles by the Buddhist Association of China that criticize and slander Dafa. How might we handle this better?

Teacher: You should use a variety of approaches in dealing with these people. Begin by sending righteous thoughts to clear out the evil behind them, for those in the Buddhist religion who are against Dafa are, like others, being controlled by evil factors that cause them to do things. Among those in the Buddhist religion there are indeed demons that reincarnated here in order to play a part in the persecution, and they've had a very bad effect. They will be eliminated in the future. Use positive means to counteract [what they are doing]—first talk to them seriously, and then proceed to explain and prove things out.

Question: How should I, as a physician, deal with being asked to do induced abortions? Is this something that I can do for ordinary people?

Teacher: I've already made this point perfectly clear in *Zhuan Falun*: that is killing.

Question: How can we help fellow students to become more proactive and to take initiative? For some time now a good number of students have been relying primarily on the assistance centers and assistants to organize them and get them to participate in validating the Fa. Their tendency of over-reliance is rather strong.

Teacher: Indeed. Just by virtue of my reading out this question slip our students should realize: Dafa disciples all have to walk their own paths. Each person has to proactively play his own role, find things to do, and seek out and save the people he is to save; you can't rely on the assistants to tell you what to do. For the most part assistants currently don't organize things unless they are large-scale activities, so are you going to not validate the Fa except on those occasions? So the majority of the time it is Dafa disciples doing things on their own.

Question: I'd like to ask, after the wicked Party collapses, will the people of China still have a chance to declare that they quit the Party?

Teacher: How meaningful would it be to quit after it has already collapsed? Now is in fact the time when beings position themselves, so how could there still be opportunities to do that after the evil Party collapses?

Question: It seems that The Epoch Times newspaper has almost stopped carrying the Nine Commentaries. Should the Chinese- and English-language editions of The Epoch Times give weight to, and carry on with, running the Nine Commentaries? Dafa disciples of Los Angeles send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: The Epoch Times should take this question seriously. It's no different than with New Tang Dynasty Television, which has broadcast it without letting up and kept at it. The *Nine Commentaries* is saving people. Just concern yourself with doing this; people won't grow tired of it.

Question: Though the Nine Commentaries has been published for as long as it has, there are still a handful of veteran students who haven't managed to shed the shell of the evil specter, and they even believe that prior to seizing political power the wicked Party was good, that it turned bad later on.

Teacher: It was bad even at the point when it seized power. *The Nine Commentaries* has exposed its sinister history. In the past, when out of self-interest it acted a little better towards those who didn't understand the true picture, that was just putting up a front in order to have more people join its ranks. When it rose to power during the time of the Paris Commune, it was hooligans revolting. In those years, the Paris Commune revolt destroyed the glorious culture that gods had wished to leave to the people of this civilization. You've seen in Paris the sculptures that line the streets and the paintings that were preserved, right? I'll tell you that those are no more than ten percent of what Paris once had, for a great deal of cultural/historic sites and the finest works of art were destroyed by the Paris Commune. It was terribly destructive. At the time Paris was brimming with works of art, and gods sighed in admiration. Such a beautiful city was thus ruined.

Question: Our cultivation right now is cultivation for the sake of others, cultivation for the sake of saving sentient beings. Is this the right way to put it?

Teacher: No, it's not. It is for yourself that you cultivate. The sentient beings that you save are encompassed by the cultivation you do, with the goal [of cultivation] still being to consummate your own world. I've said before that many have already reached the realm of consummation. I'm not just saying that casually. Back when I said that, ninety percent of our students had been raised to their positions, and the positions of Dafa disciples are no ordinary thing, it isn't an ordinary attainment status. That attainment status is unattainable by means of solely personal cultivation, it couldn't be reached by ordinary cultivation means over eight, ten, or even a hundred lifetimes! (*Applause*) That's because 1) you are lives saved by the Great Law; 2) you are Dafa disciples during the period of the Fa-rectification of the cosmos; and 3) you have the gigantic mission of saving sentient beings. And the lives you save are not ordinary either: many sentient beings have, like you, come from high levels. Dafa disciples have such a great mission, and that is why you can cultivate to such heights, validate an attainment status so great, and have such glorious achievements. (*Applause*)

Question: My husband is a Westerner who doesn't cultivate Dafa. During these years of Fa-rectification he has endured a lot. He doesn't understand the things I do, and is now asking for a divorce. Your disciple has tried hard to persuade him, but to no effect. Was this brought about by your

disciple having cultivated too poorly in certain regards?

Teacher: As far as things of this sort go, Master can speak only in terms of examples. But often when I bring up an example, you take it to be referring to you. That's not the case. Let's take the matter of the family, or the affection between husband and wife, or any of a number of other things. Have you looked at these things based on the Fa? Have you truly treated him as if you were being compassionate to a sentient being? If you really had, perhaps things wouldn't be as they are today. If on the home front your conduct looks completely like that of an ordinary person, then it's possible you will encounter this sort of thing. Nothing is simple. If you can truly let go of your attachments, and if attachments have no sway over you, then the conflicts will vanish like a wisp of smoke.

Question: There's this person who is very enthusiastic about Dafa activities, to the point where he goes around from place to place to tell people that Dafa is good. However, many ordinary people have a negative impression of Dafa because of interactions with him. For years students have tried their best to help him, but it has had no effect whatsoever. This person has attachments to showing off, fighting, greed, and showcasing supernatural powers, and when he does the exercises or sends righteous thoughts things look quite odd. It's gotten to a point where non-practitioners have asked us, "Why do you allow him to be one of you?"

Teacher: There are indeed ones like this among our students. They should be becoming more rational as time progresses closer and closer to the finish. Yet they still aren't up to standard, and they are absorbed in those petty abilities and skills they have, clinging to those little things of theirs and unable to improve. A few moments ago I talked about the height of our Dafa disciples' attainment statuses, and many of our students were able to grasp it, whereas these persons cling stubbornly to those little things they can see and fail to make progress, and they're even quite pleased with themselves. This kind of mindset is such a huge attachment—one of the greatest magnitude. They are being rendered irrational by all sorts of factors, and yet they think they're pretty rational.

Question: You have said before that when Dafa disciples work together and are going in the same direction, the Fa power that manifests is great. Yet when some students find that they are of a different opinion from each other, they loudly berate the other party in public, leading ordinary people to gather around and watch. Some students say the effect this has is bad.

Teacher: I'd like to look at this problem from two angles. Our students do fear having people gather around and watch. If there is an attachment of concern about saving face on your part, it's possible the other person's mouth will be used at that time to stir up an incident and attract onlookers so that you will see your attachment. It's cultivation after all, so every kind of means will be used to expose your attachments. Of course, when you can't see what is at work you will say, "the effect is bad." But maybe those ordinary people really didn't see or hear a thing, and maybe they will even be confused about what's going on. So that is one aspect of it. Another one is that some students don't pay heed at all to the effect it might have on Dafa. Whatever the occasion might be, they don't take into account Dafa's image, they stubbornly insist on their own things, and consider their own opinion to be first and foremost. Then isn't that a formidable attachment? Whoever insists on continuing down that dead end and fails to see his own attachments, that person's gaps are being exploited by demons and the evil; his attachments are being enlarged, amplified, and expanded; and the more he believes in his own mind that he's right on that matter, the more he feels justified in doing what he does. Any human attachment [he has] is enlarged by demons. He really can't manage to come to his senses at that time. But I want to tell you, and this is to keep this sort of thing from happening: By all means pay attention to the image

of Dafa disciples. If you're like that [person that is described in the question], how could you save people? Your righteous thoughts need to be strong. Don't let the evil keep taking advantage of your gaps like that.

Question: Could Master please explain for his disciples what the lines "With shared purpose did you come to the earth / And in gaining the Fa you took the lead" mean?

Teacher: Sure. Some students have cultivated well and they really obtained the Fa first, and thus they have had righteous thoughts and actions, always abiding in the Fa. Some people took up Dafa earlier than others, while others didn't start learning Dafa until later—this is referring to being ahead in terms of taking up the form of it.

Question: Some students regularly go to church, treating it as a place to socialize. Is that right?

Teacher: They haven't learned the Fa deeply. Indeed we do have people who have one foot in our practice and one foot out. If you want to be an ordinary person, then go ahead—I haven't said that ordinary people can't visit certain places. If you want to cultivate in Dafa, then you are welcome to do so, and if you don't wish to cultivate, then don't. But as for those who truly cultivate, they need to adhere to "no second discipline." Some people go [to churches] on account of wanting to clarify the truth there, but when spreading the Fa, you shouldn't specifically make religious groups a target. I, your master, haven't even done that, because that is something of the next stage. Now is the time when we target all the people of the world—and especially the Chinese—as we clarify the truth.

Question: There is a veteran student whose son has done many things that brought harm to Dafa. I'd like to ask, can she make a clear demarcation between her and her son? How should we look at this matter?

Teacher: Everyone is accountable himself for whatever he does, and nobody can take the place of someone else. There's no need for you to draw a line between yourself and him, as either way those are things he has done, not you. If, when clarifying the truth, you and others haven't successfully stopped him, or haven't clearly explained to him what is at stake and the consequences, then there is a problem on your part. If you really did say a lot to him and he still goes about doing those things, then it is his problem and you can let him go. Nobody can destroy Dafa. You don't need to worry, the sky won't fall or anything. What he is destroying is himself.

Question: There are students in our area who have studied the Fa and cultivated for many years and yet often behave in extreme ways. Moreover, their dispositions are poor. This has affected a lot of people. Some fellow cultivators think that people like this are not really our students, and should be sent away.

Teacher: The old forces did arrange for some people among our students to cause disturbances. Their purpose is to make sure the environment that Dafa disciples have isn't too peaceful, and thereby cause the students' human attachments to surface. So they seek to stir and muddle things up, and the old forces take advantage amidst the ensuing chaos. So as for these people, you have already come in [to Dafa], and as the master, I regard you as my disciples; whether you want to consider yourselves my disciples is something that you should really think through again carefully. After you have made up your mind, then do things in line with the requirements for Dafa disciples, in line with my, Li Hongzhi's, requirements, and don't become foggy-headed and do irrational things as the old forces planned for you and get yourself, in the end, cast down.

Question: There are many Chinese in San Francisco's Chinatown. A portion of the people there aren't willing to accept our truth-clarification materials and they don't listen when we talk to them. How should we handle these people?

Teacher: Things at present are different from in previous years, and this year is different from last. And the present is different from even the first half of this year. Give it a try and see, is it still like before? Even if it is, you have to carve out a space via the strength of your righteous thoughts, right? *(Applause)*

Question: In mainland China there are situations where at the mere mention of “Falun Gong” or “Nine Commentaries,” people don’t dare to listen.

Teacher: There are all types of people out there, and there are plenty of people who have been scared witless by the wicked Party. The wicked Party has done evil for so many years. The key thing is for Dafa disciples to use righteous thoughts to purge the evil specters that control people, and then clarify the truth to them again. Go forth with wisdom. You are saving people, after all.

Question: I often feel some formless thing pressing down on my head, especially when I quiet down. I don’t know if this is something good or if it’s an evil specter interfering with me.

Teacher: If Dafa disciples can do things righteously, and provided they don’t have strong attachments or things they are attached to on a fundamental level, then there won’t be any problems. Some say that while studying the Fa they encounter such-and-such things. This is something I often say: once you take up Dafa, whatever it is you encounter—good or bad—it is a good thing *(applause)*, for it came about only because you cultivate in Dafa. Some students experience all sorts of hardships after taking up Dafa. If you didn’t cultivate, those tribulations would lead to your destruction. But precisely because you do cultivate in Dafa, even though the pressure you face is great when the hardships come at you earlier than they would have, and the tests of your *xinxing* are tough to pass—and sometimes the tests may be huge—when all is said and done, those hardships are all things you need to overcome, they are accounts you need to settle, tabs that you need to pay. *(Audience laughs)* Aren’t they great things, then? So whether it is good things or bad things you run into, so long as you cultivate in Dafa, they are all positive, to be sure. *(Applause)*

That’s all I would like to say for today. *(Applause)* The Fa Conference should resume. Master has put some things in rather heavy terms, some were put a little indirectly, and others, while addressing some serious problems, were put rather gently. But whatever the case, as Dafa disciples you should do what Dafa disciples are to do, based on the Fa. Some people say to me, “Teacher, why do I improve so slowly nowadays?” To which I would respond: it’s not enough if you only read the books, for Dafa disciples need to do the three things well, and you have done only one of them, so you don’t sense any improvement. If you can do all of the three tasks and do them very well, you will feel yourself improving; it’s completely different from before, in the stage of personal cultivation and Fa study. That is what’s at work. The state of things since July 20, 1999, has been completely different from that of before July 20, 1999. That is why doing the three things well is cultivation, while doing only one of the three isn’t—that’s how it is, and you won’t be able to improve that way. So Dafa disciples must do them well. Of course, some of you present here today are new students, and those requirements don’t apply to you. Right now as long as you can study the Fa well and cultivate based on the Fa, that’s fine at the present stage. But for our veteran students, you have had a long time, so you have no choice but to do things on the basis of the Fa. That’s because there is a process of coming to understand things that new students go through, and though you might talk about the concept of “becoming a Buddha on the spot,” that’s just a description [not to be taken literally]. Could a person turn into a Buddha just like that, without eliminating his karma, improving in terms of understanding, or rising in terms of realms? What kind of Buddha would that be? That’s just a description. Since you are Dafa disciples, through attending this Fa Conference or listening to Master talk you will get something out of it, and you should do even better.

Time is really very tight. You've all seen that the changes in this world, as well as those in the situation of Dafa disciples' validating the Fa, are happening fast. So as time continues to change, will you still have time to do what Dafa disciples should do? Why wouldn't you make the most of your time, then? Dafa disciples look at hardships as good things and as opportunities for improvement, and as the environment improves more and more, the hardship will become ever less. When you no longer need to clarify the truth and people are taking the initiative to come hear the truth from you or seek you out to learn the practice, won't you have lost the opportunity to establish your mighty virtue? Maybe you are thinking, "That's great, they can all come to learn, and it will save me some trouble." But you won't have the conditions for improving yourself then, right? So what I think is, no matter what, you need to treasure this period of time, for it will be gone in a flash.

Humans, who are within this time, don't have much awareness of the time itself. Within but one second a person might go through an entire lifetime. In that one second, though, what the person may sense is the passage of a year, and it feels about the same to that person as taking a year to go through that year. Similarly, there is no sense of anything unusual, for a life, while under the influence of time, cannot sense the rate in which time goes by. The cosmos is composed of different times such as these, and it is humans who feel that there is still some time left. From the perspective of the highest point in the cosmos, it is but an instant, it's just that with respect to time, you have been restricted to the state of human beings. Regardless of how very long the cosmos's history has been, regardless of how very long the arrangement in history for Fa-rectification has been, and regardless of how long of a time the Three Realms has brought about, all of this will pass with the passage of time, and all that is new will swiftly appear. Many students are eagerly awaiting it, but when it really does appear, your cultivation will be at an end. Whatever your level is at that moment, that will be your level, and of course if you are a human, then a human it is. Everything will have been finalized then.

That's all for now. I hope that you will do even better, be even more diligent, and make it such that when I see you again, the change will be even greater. Thank you all. (*Applause*)

Li Hongzhi

November 5, 2005

A Reply to the Dafa Disciples of Peru

Dear Dafa disciples of Peru:

I have received your letter. You've been working hard, and I am fully aware of your situation.

Dafa disciples' cultivation is done among ordinary people, and this is something never done before in history. If you each travel well your respective paths there are bound to be difficulties, and going forward to meet those difficulties head-on is for the sake of validating Dafa, saving all beings, doing away with the old forces' arrangements, and countering the persecution. The cultivation done in the past never had these things, and Dafa disciples are the pioneers. That is why in cultivation sometimes you will do well, and sometimes you won't know what to do. When you encounter difficulties, sit down and study the Fa some more, and as long as you are righteous in thought and action, there will be no barrier that you can't pass through.

Your conduct has confirmed that the path Dafa disciples have taken is right, and moreover, that you have traveled it extremely well. With the progress of Fa-rectification everything will change for the better, and Dafa disciples will mature even more fully. I know that the difficulties you face will be resolved with the progression of Fa-rectification and with your maturation and diligent efforts. I hope that you will do even better, for Dafa disciples are the hope of all beings.

Li Hongzhi

December 17, 2005

Teaching the Fa at the Meeting on Writing Music

Most of our Dafa disciples are validating Dafa and walking their own paths in cultivation by using their special talents and what they have learned. All social strata and different occupations in human society can serve as settings for cultivation and, under the persecution, for clarifying the truth and saving sentient beings who have been led down evil paths by the wicked Party. If you can maintain righteous thoughts and righteous actions while under the pressure from the evil, that is validating the Fa and proving yourself. Those who have special skills in the arts may blaze a trail in validating the Fa. Today we have some students here who hadn't stepped forward and have come to attend the Fa conference, and this is excellent. Naturally there are some who fall behind under the pressure of circumstances. To realize that and start anew is to be responsible to oneself.

Many of our students didn't go through the colossal catastrophe that was the Cultural Revolution, for they were still quite young at the time. So amidst the present persecution of Dafa disciples and facing the pressure of harsh and sinister circumstances, they have been hit psychologically. They never went through something like this, and all of a sudden oppressive conditions like these were bearing down on them, making for a huge psychological impact. With this kind of suppression and persecution—one that utilizes every form of governmental capacity to lie, libel, and frame, and one that puts to use every instrument of dictatorship and every means of propaganda in the evil Party's arsenal—there were indeed some newer students who had never been through something like this and students who hadn't been diligent about Fa-study who didn't at the time know what they should do. Some even became outright pessimistic, and then there were those who began to completely indulge themselves among ordinary people. And since the number of people who had taken up Dafa was enormous, the students who were like this back then were not few in number. But for the majority of the Dafa disciples, Dafa had already taken root in their lives over the course of their learning the Fa, and if they were really asked to leave Dafa, I think they, being lives that had gained the Fa, would have felt that it would amount to their lives losing all hope, to having no future, and thus they truly couldn't separate from Dafa. As for the students who turned pessimistic, in reality that was fleeting confusion, though of course there were some who were far too confused. (*Master laughs*) But whatever the case, as long as you can realize it and come back, all's well. Whatever the situation, the persecution has not yet ended, and there are still opportunities to return to the path of cultivation and do the things Dafa disciples ought to do. It will then just count as a test in cultivation that you didn't pass well, and you should just walk well the path ahead. You didn't do well in the past, but don't feel burdened. That was actually because you didn't take Fa-study seriously, and because you cultivate among ordinary people, and so, under circumstances such as these, the attachment of fear leads you to fall behind the state of Dafa disciples' cultivation, and over time you are sure to have a gap in your understanding of the Fa. But don't be anxious, as you can gradually catch up through studying the Fa. As for the rest of our students, you should help the type of student [I just described]. Be understanding toward them. All of you, as long as you are counted among the disciples of Dafa, should work together with and help one another.

There is a requirement in Dafa disciples' cultivation, namely, you have to save sentient beings and validate the Fa. Ever since the persecution was launched, on the whole you have done an excellent job. Every person has been making use of what he is good at and what he has learned in order to validate Dafa, and this encompasses using the means of culture. Of course, when it comes to using the arts, if you want to have good results, you have to do a good job producing your music or artistic dance. That's right, if we're talking about music and dance, we need to have students with special aptitudes in this area. So let's see if we can't unearth a few. We do in fact have talented people like this. Let's now turn to the topic of creating [music and dance].

If you want to compose good music and put together fine works of performing arts, you really need to

put your heads together and come up with ideas. Improving the quality of your performances, including those for TV, requires your collective efforts. As things stand at present, the talented people like this are very few among our students outside mainland China. Among the students inside mainland China there are persons of every sort of talent, and there wouldn't be any problem putting together as many performance troupes as you wanted. But outside of mainland China that's pretty hard to do. So you need to think of a solution to this. I've had one idea myself. You've seen how New Tang Dynasty TV's programs are more and more on the right track, but in many regards there are still improvements to be made. Its music and performance programs aren't that rich still. You don't want your audience to feel that your TV programs are boring. So you have to think of a way to make your TV programs attract more viewers. If you are to do even better at clarifying the truth, you have to have a lot of people watch, and that means you have to suit the general public's tastes. Only that way can you be more effective clarifying the truth. That is why you have to think of a way and work together well. So it's up to you to figure out how to better achieve the maximum possible effect, that is, to make your work, be it each of your performances or each of your television programs, richer in content and higher in level. Let's sit here and discuss this a bit. Whoever has a good idea, bring it up, and we can talk it over and see how it might work out.

At present there are many challenges. One is funds, and another is having few persons with special talents—those who are trained professionals are especially few. These are the most fundamental challenges, and they're the most difficult. But as I see it, you are Dafa disciples after all, and so when it comes to validating the Fa and saving sentient beings, so long as you try hard, however much you can do, do. Since our means are limited, I think we should see if we can get the most out of what means we do have.

I have another idea. Can the TV station put together a New Years event this year? Come New Years time the Chinese TV programs in North America or wherever it is around the world lack the feel of New Years. And that's especially true for the New Years shows on mainland Chinese TV. Many people call it "disastrous TV." With that stiff Party culture and those stereotypical formulas, [those shows] all ridiculously extol the wicked Party for being "great, glorious, and correct." The "great state of things" they've invariably rigged up for decades was meant to clumsily dupe the people of China. So how about this time you create a cultural program that's free of that Party culture, and free of vulgar and crude jokes—one that truly belongs to humankind? At the very least you can give New Tang Dynasty TV's main audience a more satisfying show to watch, and this will help the station's programming overall. Though the persons of talent available now are few, it's not that we have no capacity. In fact I've seen that some of the performances you have put together are quite good. What we lack most at present are people who can compose and arrange music; with some of the performances you do the musical accompaniments are a bit plain. But as a matter of fact, we do have people who can do this. It's just a question of getting the Dafa disciples with these abilities to join in and play their role.

Those are the main things. Let's discuss and refine them together. Actually, with these sorts of concrete things, you ought to do them yourselves. These things [I've discussed] are really a bit specific, and normally I opt not to talk about specifics. Whenever Dafa disciples hold a meeting they want Master to come and say a few words, and this time, it has to do with blazing a trail in the field of arts for cultivation, saving sentient beings, and validating Dafa, so I agreed to say a few things so as to help you all be more clear on the importance of the things you do in validating the Fa. Actually, in the recent period of time you have done quite well, but we need to do things on a wider scale. You should be able to work together better; your strength should become somewhat greater; and the content of the works you create can, in each regard, improve somewhat. So that's what I think should happen. Before I came, your meeting had been underway for a bit, so let's continue it. (*Master laughs*)

Question: Master, could I ask your advice on something?

Teacher: Go ahead.

Question: I have an old friend who plays the erhu and piano, and he composes too. I know him really well, and can say that he doesn't like the way things are in China. I would like to invite him to come over [from China], and the first thing I would do after he left that place would be to clarify the truth to him.

Teacher: Actually, I had thought a while ago about the idea you're bringing up. The students in mainland China have the means to assemble as many performing troupes as need be, and it wouldn't even be a problem to put together large-scale ones; even a huge symphony orchestra could be formed. But outside China the conditions aren't there. Well anyway, an idea is just an idea, and whether or not it's practical to invite him is something you will need to think through well. And the kind of role he would be able to play after coming here has to be realistic. His stance toward Falun Gong, of course, won't be a problem once he has the truth presented to him. I can only say try and see.

Question: I think we're short on talent when it comes to composing music.

Teacher: Speaking of composing music, there are actually a good number among you [who can], and it's possible there are more who aren't here today. Right now composing music, as I see it, isn't in fact a big problem. It's how to arrange it that is the challenge.

Question: Among ordinary people there are many persons who have outstanding talent when it comes to arranging music. Can we invite them to help us?

Teacher: That's an idea, and you can try and see.

Question: I feel terribly ashamed sitting here today before Master. Yesterday at the Fa conference my tears fell like rain, because I once specialized in composing and arranging, but I haven't yet stepped forward under the persecution. All along I haven't been firm, and all along I haven't been able to discard my own baggage. I ask Master's forgiveness. From today forth I will get involved, from today forth I will truly step forward. (Applause) I have an idea for the great Tang concert. In England there are some people who specialize in researching ancient Tang music, and they have put together scores for some Tang music. I'm thinking that for the classical part [of the concert] we could write scores on the basis of Tang music.

Teacher: You all might wonder why it is I always talk about the Tang Dynasty's culture. Tang culture is real human culture, and it is the pinnacle. Whether it be craftsmanship or the culture people had, it was all at the ultimate height. Things began to decline after the Tang. Of course, you've seen that some things were pretty good in the Ming and Qing times, but actually they had already taken a turn for the trite, and the literati or artisans all focused their attention on trivial details. Their minds had become very narrow—excessively detail oriented—and they no longer had the grand air, nor the fine and exquisite crafts, of Tang times. But whatever age it was, you can draw upon [things from those ages] in your creation of performing arts. However, you need to make sure it integrates the traits of the culture that Dafa itself is to give to mankind, blazing a righteous path that Dafa disciples started and leaving it to mankind. It's not as though you should copy everything from the Tang times alone. You can draw upon the culture that the ancients of the Tang Dynasty or whatever dynasty had, and as for music, you can make its mood and flair your keynote, and create things that make the most of the characteristics of the Chinese people.

Question: Hello, Master! When dubbing background music I experience unexplained feelings; for instance, when I'm dealing with children's music, I often feel a sense of joy. I have written two songs

that have a jazz feel, and wonder if this isn't that good to do?

Teacher: Contemporary music or ancient music, whatever the case, you need to walk your own paths, based on your understandings as Dafa disciples. And why do I put it this way? Because any person in this world, however great his abilities, however great his natural gifts, if you were to ask him to walk a path that is pure and clean he couldn't. Merely having superb technique or mastery of a skill doesn't do it. Dafa disciples have become very pure in the purifying process of cultivating themselves and validating the Fa, and their realms of mind, or the ways they look at things, are different [from ordinary people]. And that is why you *are* able to do it, why you are able to truly steer the "modern" people onto a path that's truly for humans, so you can make such a difference and lay such a foundation for mankind. As I have said, the TV station you run, your newspaper, radio station, etc., all seem to face many challenges. But slowly those challenges will all be resolved. The crucial thing is to give to humankind a good form of culture. You will see that the people of the future will follow, in each and every regard, everything that Dafa disciples are doing. It will later become the principal culture of the future human race. So what's critical is whether or not you are able today to produce good things. If you can establish these essential things, the future people will study them, and so what you do and what things you produce are extremely important. The ordinary, the ancient, the modern—if it's what we need we can draw upon it. But, you definitely need to create upright things. You need to act responsibly toward people. (*Master laughs*) Relax—I'm not saying you have to have a terribly hard time with whatever you do. Actually, the things you normally produce are already different from those of ordinary people, and if your skills are taken into account those things really aren't average.

As I said a moment ago, whether it's Tang music, contemporary music, or whatever, if you can manage to integrate the strong points of these things while producing your own things, it's guaranteed to be different from the things of ordinary people. That's because your realms and the deeper meaning you have will ensure that the inner meaning of the music you create is different. But there is one thing. If you can find a way to make the fundamentals of the music itself even better, and do this well, then you will be truly taking a great path.

Question: Master, I'm somebody who has received training in Western music, though I now often deal with Chinese music. What do you think about merging Western and Chinese music?

Teacher: There is no problem with doing that per se, and you can draw upon any of them. What's key is to blaze a trail. For example, take the matter of arranging music. Arranging music wasn't something they were all that particular about back in ancient China. Back then, what they had basically took the form of playing together, and at most they'd have different instruments playing the lead or solo parts. So they didn't pay much attention to musical arrangement. The concept of musical arrangement that we have today in fact comes from the culture of Western music, and it is fundamentally something imparted to man by gods. It is one of the very best things of this cycle of human civilization, and it brings goodness to mankind.

Question: Master, the difference between classical Chinese music and Western classical music is enormous. What sort of difference is there between them in the heavens?

Teacher: Before the Renaissance the musical instruments and the music itself in the West were quite simple. After the Renaissance Western music gradually approached its zenith, and the arts of human culture in no time made a gigantic leap forward. The contrast between that period and the cultural arts man had formerly is dramatic. Now, you mentioned the music in the heavens. Of course, the varieties of music there are many, and they are formed of the different characteristics marking the states of being that the different lives there have. Today's Western music, be it the use of arrangements and musical instruments or the mastery of its instruments' capacities, its overall music theory has developed into a

comprehensive system of music, which counts as a complex and difficult subject of study compared to the music mankind originally had. Here on the human plane Western music can be seen to be a complete system, something gods purposefully passed on to man in recent times. Asian music is a kind of normal culture gods continually imparted to man over the course of establishing the larger cultural history of mankind. So the discrepancy isn't just one of the two cultures of East and West, for these are things transmitted from multiple cosmic systems, and in other, incredibly numerous cosmic systems those systems each have their own unique things, and those are extremely systematic, extremely holy, and mystical. So what we have here is but what gods passed on to man, something that can be expressed using the means of man. And it includes performing arts and painting. Man knows of only oil painting, traditional Chinese painting, etc., when in fact these are simply the traits of the cultures of the lowest lives of multiple systems passed on by gods of various systems. In other words, the yellow race corresponds to the gods at different levels of a cosmic body system, all the way up to the highest god, and in that system there is a state in which its own characteristics exist. The same is true with the whites: they have their corresponding cosmic system. And found in each such system are the characteristics and ways of existence of the different lives of a given cosmos, which, when expressed in the human world, manifest as the characteristics of the different cultures of different races. For this reason there are differences in their musical instruments and the features and styles of their music. However, the system of music present in the West in recent times, including its instruments, is not in fact something originally found in the heavenly kingdoms of the gods of the white race. It belongs to the cosmic system of faraway lives, and it was passed on solely to Western society; it was brought here for the Fa. The human culture fostered for the Fa-rectification over a long period of time is, for this level of lives, something extremely rich.

Question: Hello, Master! I'm a student whose major is Jazz. (People chuckle) So I sometimes wonder whether this is something I can do?

Teacher: Here's what I think. At present, it's the stage in which Dafa disciples cultivate amidst validating the Fa, and it's not the time of Fa rectifying the human world. So, since you are cultivating in ordinary human society, you have to eat, which means, you have to have a job. Some jobs aren't all that fitting, but, well, what can you do? What I'm saying is, it's okay for you to maximally conform to the state of affairs in the society of ordinary people when it comes to going about your work. Many things in human society are not in fact good, but that's just how ordinary human society is at this point, and the world's people accept all that. That's how society is. That's the way mankind will be before the Fa rectifies the human world, so for now we leave it as is. So you can do your work just as before. But, as you go about cultivating you have to be clear on which things are upright and which aren't. So maybe you say that you've studied those things, well then at a minimum you have some knowledge of music theory and some musical accomplishments, you've mastered that knowledge. So then, along with getting down your musical foundation, you can, in order to make a living, put to use in the form of a job what you have learned, and if you just do your best that's fine. At the same time you can produce some more standard and traditional things, and if conditions allow, you can explore other forms of more standard music, you can choose to study some things that you consider to be upright—that's something you can do. Actually, whatever it is you study, how the notes are expressed is just a matter of style, while the knowledge of music theory to be grasped is the same.

Question: Ever since the music team was formed, be it in arranging or composing, all along I have been up against a great barrier, namely, with the things I write or the arranging I help others to do, there's a shortfall in quality. But it seems that everybody has already given their all, and it seems the things I've learned have all been put to use. I really can't figure out how to break through this and improve further. (People laugh)

Teacher: If you ask me, I don't think that's necessarily the issue. Actually, I have heard the music you've played. And if we're to talk about the quality, I don't think it is a problem of the quality being low. What's critical is that the things we create be traditional and well-liked, and that we blaze a path that is upright. Don't ordinary people say that songs need to be catchy? The moment you sing it, the people near you should want to learn it and be able to hum along. In other words, it's a question of how you can make it both upright and suited to people's tastes. As a matter of fact, put plainly, on the question of how the things Dafa disciples create fare, quality is not an issue. What's key is your blazing your own path.

Question: Since 1949 China has basically had no music; the moment the average person opens his mouth to sing, what comes forth is guaranteed to be the songs of the Party and its culture, and that includes both lyrics and music. Now we have this opportunity, by drawing upon the power of Dafa and this opportune time, to truly pioneer a vast field for mankind. I feel that the music our students have created overall right now tends to have a gentle beauty and be extremely calm, but perhaps it lacks a feeling of being glorious or majestic.

Teacher: Of the descriptive words you were just using there is one that was really well put, and that's "calm." (*People laugh*) People are excessively passionate or intensely combative, and these are not the normal states of being human. It's in fact something that comes about under the effect of demon nature. Good and evil both exist in a person, so when a person is especially worked up, or when his actions even overstep the bounds of what is rational, that mostly comes from the stuff of contemporary music. When a person is irrational and in the throes of something, when he goes wild and has lost his reason, that has to do in fact with the things of his negative side being roused. By contrast when a person is in a calm state, he is good, and that in fact is the true state of a human being. Within calmness there are ups and downs, but it's fully rational, and in calmness there is its own glory, though that glory is based on calmness. (*Applause*)

As I see it you have plenty of ability. There's no need to compare yourselves to what are currently regarded as "elite" standards. Actually, nowadays much of what passes for elite is the contemporary stuff. How many people now can compose truly traditional, decent, great musical movements? They've all gone the route of "contemporary music." The songs in China in recent times are all the product of the Party's culture, with nothing left that is truly presentable. No one in China now can produce anything like what those Western musicians created before the last century. Of course, the West can't produce that now either, for its peak has already passed, and that chaotic "contemporary" stuff has knocked [its classical music] down to the very bottom. But the West once had it, whereas China did not. There have in fact been some very good things in ancient and recent Chinese music. Their bases and essential melodies are all the kinds of things that reflect the true state of man, and if somebody wanted to create [such music] he could truly capture with it enormous, vast dimensions; it's only that now there is nobody putting effort into such things, making it even harder for it to develop into a system. Of course, with a change in dynasty comes a change in culture, and the things of the previous dynasty are washed away by the impact from the new dynasty's culture. That too is a reason [for such music's disappearance]. So there is no way that the essence of the music of the culture of some 5,000 years could carry through to today; nobody in any dynasty has managed to preserve it. The schools for painting and music in the West didn't come about until the last two centuries. Such schools have subject courses, standards, and norms. And those studying there know what to learn, and all who graduate from the schools have gone through systematic and standard training. Thus a complete system has been formed. In China's dynastic history there was never anything like that. Of course, after the founding of the Republic there began to be people in China who placed value in these things. Gradually there came to be students who returned after some time studying abroad, and they had mastered some things of Western music. So from the latter days of the Qing Dynasty on there gradually came to be persons with

these talents. But as for being able to truly systematize via music the culture, depth, or flair of the Chinese people, or to make of it something truly decent and part of mainstream culture, nobody has done that. The wicked Party has been barking up a storm for so many years, what with stuff like its "Let a hundred flowers bloom" campaign, but that's all in the interest of its sinister rule. And in fact, it hasn't really done anything, for this Party culture that's meant to serve the dictatorship is violent, intensely fervent, and it has made a goal of destroying China's ethnic culture. It clashes with the true, calm features of human beings, and it has no human touch, much less of course anything like the depth and flair of China's 5,000-year-old classical civilization. And the most foundational stuff the wicked Party came up with was introduced from the Soviet Union.

I think you all seem to have rather lofty aspirations and high ideals. If that's what you are aiming for, then make a go of it and see. From what I can tell, of the ditties and folk songs that have been handed down in China from antiquity to the present, many of those things have the flavor of various dynasties, and the things that people in China create nowadays have some elements from various dynasties too, along with Soviet flavor. Back in the times of Old Shanghai there were a lot of popular songs. Although the lyrics of some of them weren't so good, embodied in those songs was the rich, lasting charm of classical China along with the consciousness of our forefathers. So the basis of the tunes then was the rhythmic charm of China's ancient traditions. If you can, on the basis of the tunes and rhythms of ancient China's music, and using the techniques and methods of Western music, build on them—if you can blaze this path—then *that* would be magnificent. You're clear on what I am saying, right? I ask since you're experts when it comes to these things.

Question: Western musical instruments have their overtone. I think that a person can sense the connotations behind the overtone. The overtones of Western instruments and Chinese instruments each have their own specific properties and characteristics.

Teacher: That's just your own particular sense. Now as to connotations, human culture has a definite historical process to it, and each note that is performed has the connotations of that ethnic group's specific characteristics as well as an individual's feelings in life. Each piece of music contains the mood which the performer wishes to convey, and of course the notes used will have to do with expressing connotations, and that includes the utilization of overtone. [What you described] is just your own sense of these things.

Question: I'm a student from Austria. We have formed a band in Austria composed of four people. I study classical piano, while the other three play jazz. We now have a problem: they say that the music they produce is pure, while in fact it's still pretty much jazz.

Teacher: Perhaps it's the notion that they have formed that thinks it's pure. If there were really no notions stemming from contemporary music affecting them, the things they create would definitely be different. It's still like I said, though: if you perform those things so as to make a living, then that's fine. However, when it comes to truly producing the music of Dafa disciples, you have to blaze your own path. And in that process there are bound to be issues in terms of understanding.

Question: They do jazz music at school. If we perform on the street is that okay?

Teacher: If you can truly blaze a trail that is good, your performances will draw large numbers of listeners—for sure. Remember something I said: mankind revolves around Dafa, and each and every action of Dafa disciples today has an effect on mankind. The other day I had a meeting with those who specialize in painting, and I spoke with them about why one should go the route of traditional arts. Before, when they sought out a site for a show and wanted to hold an art exhibit they had a hard time finding one. After I finished explaining that mankind should return to the path of traditional art, one could sense that the attitude of the world's people had changed, for gods wanted to make way for the

Fa. But that said, if you don't do well with things you will meet with obstacles, because whatever Dafa disciples do is inseparable from cultivation. The fact is, mankind is revolving around Dafa. If you really produce your own things—take a look yourself—everybody will listen to it and watch it, and many will even want to learn it.

Question: I would like to ask Master to spell out some things that have to do with the principles of creating music. One is, when I am writing a concerto, can I incorporate the music of Dafa, that is, Pudu, as one of the movements? A second question is, when it comes to forming an orchestra we are lacking in manpower, and so sometimes when we have only a handful of people performing on stage it doesn't have the impact of a full orchestra. Could I create some background music and then have people play along on top of it? A third question is, in the past I have heard music from other dimensions, and I'm wondering if I can use that?

Teacher: The matter of working together that I just talked about involves exactly this, for there aren't going to be any clashes over copyrights among you. It's a question of how to do a good job of working together, and how to blaze a trail that Dafa may leave to the people of the future. Cultivators aren't concerned with the successes and failures one has in this world; it's ordinary people that take success and failure, or even fame and wealth, seriously. What Dafa disciples seek is the true attainment that comes through cultivation, and so they attach no importance at all to those ordinary things. Whenever someone does something for Dafa, the gods make a careful record of it to be kept for the future. As for what people here seek to gain, we seek none of it, and that's why you are, for one, cultivating yourself, and secondly, doing things for sentient beings. You are saving sentient beings, and you are paving for sentient beings the path of the future human race. However, if you want to use Pudu in the music you are creating, it's not that you can't do it—what's key is that you have not grasped the inner meaning of Pudu. In it is the entire process Master went through from prehistory up through the Fa-rectification—could any concerto possibly encompass that?

As for your second question, it's about orchestras. At present it's not possible to put together overnight a large-scale symphony orchestra and have it perform. But we do have a few different approaches right now. For the music for stage performances such as dance and the like, you can create it by using a computer to overdub the sounds of the instruments. One violin can become many this way, and by overdubbing you can turn a handful of instruments into what seems like a full-fledged orchestra. People often do this to cut costs when they make movie soundtracks. So that's one approach. Another is, you can use a computer to directly simulate an orchestral performance. That's fine too. But the quality of some things isn't so good, and you can tell right away that it's electronic. Since it's a simulation, be sure your simulation is as realistic as possible. All of you who play music understand this, for you should all have some knowledge about the properties of musical instruments. So of course, however realistic the simulation might be, professionals can hear the difference, though your average listener can't make it out. *(People laugh)* Those are both approaches you can take. The third question was about music heard from other dimensions. If you can truly produce that, then go ahead, but I think in general it will be hard to do. The reason is that when you are not in higher dimensions yourself, you won't have musical instruments that are comprised of more microcosmic matter, and as a result you won't be able to bring out that sound. Moreover, sound itself is the transmission of a material field, and without a material field composed of matter of higher dimensions there won't be the feeling of holiness [otherwise present].

Question: Can Pudu and Jishi be incorporated into our compositions?

Teacher: Pudu and Jishi... the first question I just talked about was this, and [I said] there's no issue of copyrights. Other than the two pieces of music you use with your exercises that aren't to be used elsewhere, other pieces can be used; and they're meant to be used in situations where they are needed,

so it's no problem. The exercise music absolutely cannot be used elsewhere, though, for so much is at stake in its connection to cultivation. It cannot be integrated into other music. With other music, then, though it was created by Dafa disciples, it's meant for ordinary people after all. As for Pudu and Jishi, you need to know what the inner meaning is that they portray. Cramming the cosmos into an egg isn't right.

Question: If the quality of the exercise music deteriorates, can we sometime down the road re-record it?

Teacher: That's fine to do. There is no problem with improving its quality.

Question: When synthesizing music it's best to make it sound more lifelike. Then that would mean we need to buy rather good equipment and need substantial funds.

Teacher: That's not necessarily so. Some rather simple computer software is inexpensive, and you can buy it from China. *(People laugh)* The quality is acceptable and yet it's inexpensive.

Question: Thinking in the long-term, would it be okay to take out a loan to buy a better computer?

Teacher: You can think of your own approaches. But there's one thing, and that is, Master has never said that you should insist on doing something where circumstances don't allow for it. You should definitely do things in keeping with your own capacity. Otherwise, though your motivation might be good, it would still be going to extremes. If you bring hardship into your daily life, if in each and every regard you make things hard for yourself, then it's going to be harder for you to do the things that Dafa disciples should do. Don't make things hard for yourself.

Question: For the concert we bought a zhongruan and a daruan. When buying them we noticed that the music store had a Qing era pipa. After it was described to us we came to realize that the strings used on premodern instruments were different from today's. Nowadays they have steel strings, whereas in ancient times the construction was different. Now they are somewhat louder.

Teacher: In antiquity they used silk strings and beef tendon strings. The environment man had back in ancient times wasn't noisy, people's minds were quiet, and if you used silk strings back in that setting the volume wouldn't seem too low to people. That's because in antiquity they didn't have modern Western instruments, whereas nowadays when people compose they want to blend with present circumstances. In antiquity it was always silk or tendon strings, and it wasn't just a matter of not having the manufactured goods crafted with modern technology; it had a lot to do with the atmosphere of antiquity. What we want to do now is blaze our own path, not return our instruments to their ancient forms. Man's setting today is already how it is now, and we have no choice but to use today's instruments.

Question: If we want to broadcast live our New Years event, at present we probably don't have the equipment needed. But if we're to now go about preparing as if to broadcast live on New Years...

Teacher: Here's how I see it: we lack the conditions and a live broadcast isn't feasible. And if we were to have everybody come to the U.S., and gather all of our talent for one event, that would be hard to do. That's because some people have to work or go to the office, or they can't get away from family, or it's too much of a burden financially—there would be difficulties of all sorts. But if you could weave together the artistic programs of each area and produce a DVD, to bring them all together and integrate them, that would work. With computers nowadays you can really make it so that it looks realistic.

Question: [I understand that] we can share one another's music, but is there a copyright issue when it comes to the outside world? To illustrate what I mean, four years ago when I made a Falun Gong program I used Pudu and Jishi. A TV station director really took a liking to the music and said it was

unbelievable. He asked if we might contribute it to the station, and we did.

Teacher: That wasn't very appropriate. Also, people won't treasure it. What if they use it recklessly? We don't have time to oversee what ordinary people do with the things we create for them, but it's not appropriate to give Pudu and Jishi to ordinary people for casual use. Other things are okay. Generally speaking there's no issue with the songs Dafa disciples create, save for these two pieces.

Now as for copyrights, do you know how we did things during the years when I was spreading the Fa? We had to go through a lot of trouble to have *Zhuan Falun* published legally. So a press published it, but after printing it for a while the press came under pressure and stopped. But they knew the book was really profitable, and they didn't want to go back on the contract with me. And then there were so many students who needed the book and they became anxious. And what could we do about it? So many students were learning the practice, and the students at the practice sites were increasing in large numbers, but they had no books. The books were in short supply. It was at that time that pirated editions sprang up all around the country, and they were being made everywhere. As long as they didn't change a single character of mine and could guarantee the quality, I didn't mind. People live to make money after all, and the merits and problems with what they were doing offset one another, so I didn't mind if they made money off of it. Many of our Dafa disciples' things are to be given to people after all. As long as somebody is able to cherish it, he won't use it haphazardly or modify it. If he does modify it you should track him down, for we still hold the copyright.

Question: Good songs can influence generations of people, and right up through today they are still popular.

Teacher: A talented musician, you know, how is it that he can compose such quality songs? And how is it that he is able to have a lasting reputation? It's not just that the melodies are exquisite. The connotations of a piece of music come from a person's good character, his rich life experiences, and his innate talent. That's the human side of it. The life of a cultivator has been changed, and what's more, it surpasses the level of ordinary human beings. Dafa disciples, when you are able to truly blaze your own paths, your things will be revered by people even more than those of the famous musicians among ordinary people. They will have a lasting reputation, and for a thousand generations at that. That's because you are Dafa disciples, and your path is righteous, so what you create will forever be what mankind will learn and use. *(Applause)*

Question: Master, I'd like to ask, is pop singing demonic in nature?

Teacher: The popular way of singing is just the common people's song, and it doesn't need to have the manner of formal vocal performance. The folk songs of each country have been passed down through the years like that, and it's true of all ethnic groups. These days, however, people have standardized them into contemporary music's system, and they have added in modernist coloring, turning it into something of poor taste, a venting of demonic nature—even to the point that you have obscene stuff that's a mess. Many young people seek out this stuff. Regardless of what type of singing it is, you can always draw on the good things in it. But you have to walk your own path.

Question: Master, I think that there are two tendencies in the songs [that we are] creating nowadays. One is that they are singing things that have to do with our own cultivation, and the other is that, so as to have ordinary people understand what they hear, even things like "Falun Dafa is good" can't be mentioned in the songs. I don't think that's right.

Teacher: Validating the Fa is something Dafa disciples should definitely do (and there is nothing wrong with that). So when you are creating music you should take as your goal saving sentient beings, clarifying the truth, and praising Dafa disciples. Of course, if we're talking about a television drama,

and you want to add in some mood music to the story of the drama or a performance on stage, then that's no problem. Television dramas are entertainment programs after all, and they are made for a range of viewers to see—especially ordinary viewers. Of course, as for the content of musical compositions, some, owing to the needs of the story line or the life stories of many ordinary people [being depicted], have nothing to do with Dafa disciples. Then does that mean you aren't going to write them? You still need to write them, you still need to produce them. And in fact, whatever the case may be, those will be things Dafa disciples have produced after all, and so they will be different. When it's something that truly portrays Dafa and Dafa disciples in a direct and positive manner, Dafa's things should still be the theme. If you, who are Dafa disciples, don't consider Dafa whatsoever, and you just want to create ordinary people's things, then you *are* an ordinary person. The responsibility of Dafa disciples is to save sentient beings and validate the Fa. It's not hard to keep these things in perspective.

Question: Teacher, I'd like to ask something, though I'm not sure it's appropriate. Doesn't it seem that ever since the CCP seized power in China, that wicked Party has often been using waist drums?

Teacher: I can tell you that the waist drum has a history of almost a thousand years in China, and it's a form of culture handed down from the areas of western China and the central Shaanxi plain. So talking about waist drums, I know there's also another form of drum. You've seen how in Shaanxi province there's a kind of drum this size, almost a foot and a half in diameter, one that only men use, and it has a real air about it when it's played. Do any of the people here who are dancers know about this one? You can also use that type, it too is good. You know what? When you first used the waist drum in a parade in New York, many people said, "The Chinese people have come." They felt that these were the true people of China who had come. The wicked Party is using the things of Chinese culture to glorify itself. But those sure aren't the wicked CCP's things. That Party is a spirit from the West, an evil spirit. *(Master laughs)*

Question: Supposing we want to issue some music that's pleasant to the ear, such as a special collection of erhu music, would it be inappropriate to merge Chinese and Western things when arranging the music?

Teacher: The idea I expressed was that you can draw upon anything that is good. So of course the method of arranging music they have in the West or its music theory is fine to use. If you say you want to bring those things over full-scale, say, half will be Chinese, half Western, then that's not the idea. It's about how to blaze your own path [that I am getting at]. I think that the Western music and Asian music found in the cultures of this cycle of the human race are both good things. No matter what race it is, when each first came down here and entered the human world they were first born in China. After the passing of a dynasty they would then leave China for places throughout the world. Then by whom were China's things left behind? By gods, from the cultures of various dynasties, and from the whole world's people. I have talked about these things before. What you are doing is making choices, choosing the good things from the inheritance given to us by history.

Question: The local folk songs of Shanxi and Shaanxi provinces make up some 80% of all of China's folk songs. The basic melodies of the music there are remarkably beautiful. Some of the lyrics have been distorted since 1949, but in fact the original music and the melodies are excellent. I'm not sure if it's right [for me to think this way]. Might Master say a word about this to put my mind at ease?

Teacher: With some of the folk songs from northern Shanxi and Shaanxi, many of the melodies are things of ancient China.

Most of our discussion so far has been about music. The creation of performing arts also needs to keep pace. Generally speaking the bulk of an evening entertainment program involves group dance, and without that it would seem a little monotonous or dull. If an evening artistic event on stage doesn't have

dance in it, then it doesn't really count as evening entertainment. Then we need to think about how we might be able to further explore this front, and blaze a trail. I've seen before evening entertainment programs by song and dance troops in western China where they perform things from ancient culture, and the items from historical culture are many. You can look into those things, but don't completely follow the example of someone else. Blaze a path that is your own.

Question: What should we do to be able to better coordinate with the television station? I ask because we're all scattered around the world.

Teacher: It's not easy for you to get together, and it's hard if you want to coordinate things. But you can use computers, fax machines, and the phone, and you will be able to communicate about a lot of things. Make the most of these. You're all poles apart, all around the world. For all of you to come together really is hard. The good thing is, after today's meeting you will know how to go about things, and can this way chart out a path to take. And in fact you all have latent potential [still to tap].

Question: Our ensemble would like to play throughout Austria. If our own songs don't number enough, can we as Dafa disciples play the classical songs of ordinary people? For example, how about the works of Mozart or Chopin?

Teacher: That's not a problem. I've long since said that classical music is fine. You can cautiously use things from times before the Cultural Revolution—just make sure they're free of Party culture. Basically anything that predates the wicked Party can be used. Don't use anything from these times of the Despot, for inside they are brimming with evil; mankind has been controlled by demons during this period.

Question: So if we can't use the music that was made during the decade or so under the Despot, what about the television programs and movies from that period, should we also not use those?

Teacher: I think that none of the things from that era are good. They have behind them the factors of all sorts of rotten ghosts which control people.

Question: We already have some songs. Which songs should we take as our theme music around which to build an orchestra or a small ensemble?

Teacher: Detail-type things like this you will have to talk over yourselves. There shouldn't be any problem.

Question: Recently a Western student at our TV station produced a couple of music videos, but what he adopted was a contemporary music style that's suited for guitar and electric guitar.

Teacher: That's okay. The TV station has a foot in ordinary society, and it's directed at common, ordinary people. So electrical instruments are fine to use. Dafa disciples need to do well, and be upright, on the path of cultivation they take, but when it comes to ordinary work you just need to try hard to do a little better than is typical. Our TV programs are for ordinary people to watch. Right now isn't the time when the Fa rectifies the human world, but rather the phase where Dafa disciples cultivate, clarify the truth, and expose the persecution. At present there's nothing problematic about [what you described].

Here's the situation, who here knows how to arrange music? Raise your hands. Okay, everybody take a good look—especially those of you from the TV station. Whenever your shows are in need of music you can look for these people. And whoever knows how to arrange can write the songs.

Look around—there are quite a few. And I know that there are a lot more who are not here but are very skilled, and let's have them play their parts. If people can't do well right on the first try, don't nitpick. With goodwill you can improve together by sharing and discussing, and each will gradually come to

mature on his own path; when you have just started it's possible it won't go well. So, not only do you need to produce your own things, but also, later on, you should increase the output. *(Master laughs)* For example, maybe you produce something and then think you're all set, and you feel satisfied—"I did it." That's no good. If a Dafa disciple saves just one person, does that do the job? No, it doesn't. You need to save many.

Question: Master, I'd like to ask something that has to do with the Fa. Buddha Shakyamuni attained the Dao by cultivating many hundreds of millions of eons ago, but our Earth has only had two cycles of Earth, with each being 100 million years long. So does that mean that...

Teacher: It wasn't on Earth that Buddha Shakyamuni did his cultivation before. *(People laugh)* Buddha Shakyamuni came to the world to save people. In the heavens he is a god, and he has long since attained the Dao. [His coming] that time around was to validate the attainment status of Tathagata and to give mankind Buddhist culture. Many of the stories Buddha Shakyamuni told were about affairs in the heavens, not affairs on this earth. Haven't I said, when a human being sees a Buddha sitting there he is so holy, but when a Buddha looks upon a Buddha it's not like that. They are part of a collective society of gods.

Time is limited, so we have to wrap up the meeting now. You are Dafa disciples, so I am confident you can do well. I look forward to good news from you. *(Applause)*

Li Hongzhi

July 21, 2003

Washington, D.C.)

Note: Only this much could be assembled owing to matters related to the sound recording.

Last updated: December 23, 2005.

Congratulatory Message

To the Dafa disciples attending the Atlanta Fa Conference: Greetings!

I would like to first wish this grand conference complete success. I hope that all of you will gain something from the conference and do well on the path that remains ahead.

Dafa disciples, you are golden light in the mortal world, the hope of the world's people, Fa-disciples who help Master, and future Fa-Kings. Keep diligent, Awakened Ones that walk the earth: Everything of today will be the glory of the future.

Li Hongzhi

December 31, 2005

Eliminating the Evil

All along, lowlife secret agents of the wicked CCP have been constantly gathering so-called “Falun Gong intelligence.” The dissemination of Dafa, however, is solely for the sake of having people cultivate, and in spreading the Fa, everything is done out in the open and with no secrets. Even as the evil Party carries out its irrational, sinister persecution of Dafa disciples, everything that Dafa disciples around the world have been doing to counter the persecution is open—to the point of many things being put in writing on the Clearwisdom website and shared openly. The acts of the lowlife secret agents of the evil Party are in fact done, for one, because [the CCP] knows the persecution is groundless and it feels insecure about that. So it bluffs and blusters to show strength. At the same time, they’re done so that CCP insiders can deceive one another, generate false intelligence, and come up with reasons for the persecution, and all of this is done for the sake of a handful of individuals who have gotten themselves into a hopeless bind persecuting Falun Gong. But when it comes to those people who don’t think for themselves, and who can’t distinguish good from evil—especially those who, after being instilled with the evil Party culture, use the perspectives, logic, and standards of the evil Party, which are not those of normal people, to judge what is kind or wicked, good or bad, and what should or should not be done—the evil Party has manipulated and used them very easily, and they have fully become shameful tools of the evil Party. Meanwhile, these people have indeed committed colossal sins in persecuting Dafa disciples, and they are beyond redemption.

In spreading the Fa and saving sentient beings these years, I have actually included people from all social strata and professions, and I have not treated anyone differently than others. When being saved by Dafa, all beings are equal, including those who are in very bad professions, such as secret agents. When literary or artistic works portray people in these professions as heroes, that is done out of political necessity and to meet the needs of nationalism, it is done to stay in power, and it is human beings who dub them “heroes.” In the eyes of gods, they are the lowest and most criminal of people, they are liars and persons who damage human morality. Their characters and behavior are despicable and shameless, their actions criminal. They are different from the detectives in normal settings who solve crimes. But don’t forget that human affairs are planned by gods, whether humans interpret the way they unfold as good or bad. Human beings have karma, and for this reason must go through the cycle of karmic retribution. If gods don’t want something done, nobody will be able to do it, regardless of whether human beings think of it as a good thing. And with those things that gods do want done, the actions of human beings are merely part of the playing out of karmic retribution.

While the Fa was being spread over the years, there were indeed some people who did this type of work and who, despite their initial motivations for coming in, became genuine Dafa disciples after coming to understand Dafa. Thus I continually gave opportunities to such people, for among them there really were some with good foundations and who were excellent people in their previous lives; some were beings who came down from high realms. So I couldn’t deny them salvation just because they were secret agents in this lifetime. Life is precious, and the process of going through life is precious, so I have always waited for them to come to their senses—this, even though Dafa disciples were suffering persecution at their hands. And in order to save them, I even told Dafa disciples to clarify the truth to them while being persecuted. The evildoers not only haven’t listened, but their karma has grown ever greater—to the point that they can no longer be saved. Moreover, at this point the interference from the secret agents has developed into a trend of persecuting Dafa disciples, and that is absolutely unacceptable. The use of lowlife secret agents to target Dafa disciples’ cultivation in such a manner, as arranged by the old forces, absolutely cannot be acknowledged. Viewed in terms of cultivation, it’s not as if there is some indispensable connection between cultivation and those lowlife secret agents, who

are the lowest of the low of the human race. Thus I shall no longer recognize this type of thing, and in the future, this specific type of agency will not exist, nor will there be great numbers of people who hold this type of loathsome occupation.

Henceforth, the gods and I will completely take away the future of this type of human occupation, and take away the good fortune in the lives of the lowlife secret agents who have been produced by the evil CCP since July 20 of 1999, and have them very swiftly wrap up their lives, paying in the process for the sins they committed. And this especially holds for all who participated in and planned the Atlanta incident: the good fortune in their lives will be completely taken away. Starting from this moment, they will pay for their sinful karma, [the misery of which will leave them] wishing they were dead. In rapid succession they will die and descend to Hell. The same fate awaits each and every CCP secret agent, in China or abroad, who fails to repent and change his or her ways. I am saving all sentient beings, but those who don't want to have a future nonetheless cannot be allowed to destroy sentient beings' opportunity for salvation.

Those who are still persecuting Dafa disciples: I hope that you will truly come to understand what Falun Gong is, as well as why the evil Party has been persecuting Dafa disciples. I hope even more that you will have a good future.

Li Hongzhi
February 9, 2006

Teaching the Fa in the City of Los Angeles

(*Enthusiastic applause*) (*Disciples say, "Hello, Master! Hello, Master!"*)

Okay, please be seated. Thank you all. You've been working hard. (*Enthusiastic applause*)

Another year has gone by in a flash. We have already been through six years of Dafa disciples saving beings, validating the Fa, and working against the persecution, and now we are in the seventh year. As Dafa disciples, you have seen the changes in the status of Fa-rectification, and you have seen how society looks at and understands Dafa disciples and the changes along those lines. The changes in the overall situation are related to the situation of Fa-rectification as a whole, and are directly related to the tremendous impact that Dafa disciples have had in validating the Fa. So, put another way, none of what Dafa disciples have done has been in vain, and you have accomplished tremendous things. All of what you have done is evident, and you have felt this yourselves. In other words, even though it has been six to seven years, at this time you absolutely cannot become lax in terms of doing what Dafa disciples are supposed to do.

Through studying the Fa and cultivating, you are all aware of and completely clear about what you are doing. We are absolutely not some sort of ordinary people's political organization, nor is it some kind of ordinary people's club formed for fun. What we are doing here is *cultivation*, and this is a process whereby lives are fundamentally transformed into high-level beings. What I am saying is, those in the audience here are all lives who are on their way to divinity. So for you, all of the things that Dafa disciples do in validating the Fa and saving beings are utterly crucial, especially at this key juncture in history.

In fact, everything you have been experiencing was planned in remote, ancient times. But none of the things that take place among mankind, particularly the cultivation of Dafa disciples, appear entirely like divine manifestations, as they would in divine realms. If it were like that, then gods would be doing things directly, and there would be no such thing as Dafa disciples cultivating or Dafa disciples saving sentient beings. From the high levels to the low levels, some selections would be made based on who is good enough and who isn't, and that would be it—none of the things that are happening today would have taken place. So, as I have said, *this* history of the human race has been—to the extent that the world's people can know about it—several thousand years long. This is a very short period of time in terms of the history of the Earth; the history before this was also directly and indirectly related to the people today; and, in an even more remote time, on the previous Earth, things were rehearsed once for this Fa-rectification. But this time it's for real. All of these things were created for the Fa-rectification and for all that today's Dafa disciples have been doing, even though things appear just as they do with ordinary people. Only when things are in this state can sentient beings be saved, and only in this state of delusion can beings ascend, can a person's heart and mind be judged, and can whether a person is up to par be determined. If it were entirely gods manifesting in human society, then one wouldn't be able to determine who was good enough and who was not, for a person's thoughts cannot take the place of that person's actual deeds. If things were done that way, then as soon as human beings saw a god, it's guaranteed that they would cease to have any bad thoughts, as no attachment could compare with the god, and then that person's true conduct couldn't be seen. With a real, live god before him, that person would really have nothing but righteous thoughts. But what is that being really like? Is he good enough? After having gone through such a long and drawn out period of time, [these beings] must discern all such things in this state of delusion. The same is true with cultivation: only when someone is in delusion can he elevate fast. In other words, although the degree of delusion can be different, only by going through the process of being in delusion can one improve; without delusion there would be no such thing as improvement. I have said before that it is very hard for gods to rise in level; whichever

realm a god validates and enlightens to, that is the realm in which he will be. And why is that? It's because everything that is displayed before him is the reality of the universe, and there is no longer any delusion. So for him there is no such thing as cultivation and no issue of whether he tries to come to higher understandings.

What I was just talking about was to tell you that no matter how long of a tumultuous time you have been through, or how much longer is required, you can't be attached to time. The more rampant the evil is, the more it bears out the Dafa disciples' mighty virtue in saving all beings; and the more critical the moment, the more it bears out the Dafa disciples' magnificence. Yes, you are cultivating in [this realm of] illusion, so sometimes you manifest a state wherein you slack off, sometimes you are interfered with, and sometimes you seem very much like ordinary people. Of course, these, too, are manifestations of the states that you go through during the process of cultivation. If it weren't that way, it would not be cultivation, and it wouldn't be human beings cultivating—it would be gods doing so. Of course, there is no such thing as a god cultivating. In other words, no matter what, whether your understanding of things is good or bad, whether you pass a test well or not, and no matter how many of your attachments you have removed—all of it is the carrying out of your cultivation, and these are manifestations during the process. Passing some tests well and some poorly is normal, and just because a student does something wrong because of a momentary lapse, or a student isn't diligent during a certain time or can't make it through during a period of time, or has even made mistakes, you can't say that this student is no longer cultivating or is no longer good enough. In reality, aren't these all manifestations in cultivation? Only when it's looked at in light of cultivation itself can it be seen whether you have done well or not, if you are up to par or not, and if you are attached or not. So, in other words, these things will manifest during the process. But the overall situation of Fa-rectification and everything Dafa disciples have been doing are the main things, and the group as a whole is righteous and is moving forward in a very healthy manner.

You know, the progress of the Fa-rectification manifests [from time to time], and for the most part Dafa disciples have been solidly and steadily proceeding according to the needs of Fa-rectification's different circumstances. Cultivation is of course the process of establishing and completing a being. But the converse of that is, for those who are truly unbecoming, the cultivation process is also one of weeding out. So whenever a particular situation comes about, some human thoughts will emerge for sure, because it is, after all, humans who are cultivating. There have been some relatively obvious changes in the situation. For example, the time before July 1999 was a period for Dafa disciples' personal cultivation, and since July 1999, Dafa disciples have been cultivating as they work against the persecution. Ever since the *Nine Commentaries* was released, some people have been thinking, “Does this have anything to do with our cultivation?” Some who had studied the Fa well and had fairly strong righteous thoughts knew that this persecution was the result of the old forces using a vile force among human beings, the wicked CCP, and that this kind of persecution could exist only under the wicked regime of the CCP. If the wicked regime of the vile CCP didn't exist, a persecution like this would not have taken place. However vicious the evil specters may be, they have to use bad people to carry out their evil deeds. And the ordinary bad people in this world are incapable of producing such a massive persecution. It's because the wicked, despicable, and absolutely base Party is in control of the evil regime that the evil specters' factors were able to use it and generate this persecution. But some people just can't come to terms with this, and have become foggy-headed. But actually, why would they become foggy-headed? I think the key factor at work is fear. So to put it plainly, it is still due to their attachment, and everything else is an excuse.

At this point, let me talk about Dafa disciples' cultivation form.⁵ Actually, I have always said to you

⁵ Note: The Chinese term here can be translated as “form,” “format,” “formality,” etc. It is rendered according to the

that the way today's Dafa disciples cultivate is one of a "Great Way without form." Each of you is a part of ordinary society, each performs his or her own functions in society, each is in his own social strata, each has his own profession, and each has his own circumstances. In other words, your cultivation is fully a part of society and doesn't take any specific form. I remember that at one experience-sharing conference a student passed up a question slip that asked, "Master, is our form one of no form?" Having no form *is* a form. So I saw that you were able to think of this idea. (*Teacher chuckles*) Actually, let's think about it, what is "nothingness"? I mentioned before that people thought "emptiness" meant that nothing exists. And some people have said that "nothingness" meant not having anything exist. If nothingness truly meant that nothing was there at all, then what is nothingness itself? And if "emptiness" meant everything was gone, then what would emptiness itself be? If nothing really were existent, then even the concept of a name would not be there. In other words, the cultivation of a Great Way without form is really a formless kind of form.

You know, historically, whether it was Shakyamuni, Laozi, Jesus, or the many other Enlightened Ones or saints who taught their Fa or Dao in pre-history, they invariably took one of two approaches. One was to leave the secular world and cultivate, and the other was to take the form that Christianity and Catholicism use. For this reason, and drawing from past experiences, people have formed narrow understandings of divine beings and formed a sort of culture. That's why as soon as you mention things like a being elevating, rising, cultivating, and so on, the world's people think about the formats that religion has used in the past and present. But these religions' formats are not the only ones in the cosmos, and they can't represent the various Fa that boundless numbers of divine beings each validated, or the formats that each of them used to accomplish that. The number of gods at even each tiny level is so large that it's innumerable, so how could those two formats represent everything? They definitely can't. Then, exactly how many formats for cultivation are there?

You have read in *Zhuan Falun* that there are eighty-four thousand cultivation disciplines in the Buddhist System and thirty-six hundred cultivation disciplines in the Daoist System. In fact, that was said from the vantage point of a very small level, that is the understanding at a certain level, and it was taught only to the extent that human beings could comprehend. You know, there are Buddhas beyond Buddhas, there are Heavens beyond Heavens, and there are Gods beyond Gods. So how big *is* the cosmos? It is just boundlessly and endlessly immense. Having reached the point I have reached today in going about Fa-rectification, even though I am already taking care of the final matters, the most, most basic elements that make up the cosmos are gigantic beings that exist in such a way that even to the high-level beings in the cosmos they seem incomparably gigantic and unreachable, much less to humans. In other words, there are so many gigantic beings in the cosmos, and the gods all have their own ways of establishing themselves, and they all have Fa-principles that have formed based on their own understandings of the cosmos. Here I am using human language to describe it. Furthermore, there are also tens of millions of different, gigantic cosmic systems in the cosmos. And those gigantic systems are of course all experiencing the final Fa-rectification of the entire cosmos.

Think about this, if these gigantic systems are Gods, won't they wonder: "How is it you Buddhas are supposed to be better than us? You're teaching the Great Law of the Cosmos by way of Buddha Fa, and rectifying the entire cosmos with the Buddha Fa. But our system is not directly related to yours, so how could you Buddhas rectify our Fa here? How could the gods of your system direct things in our system? Are those Fa-rectification approaches of yours suitable for our system? We have completely different understandings about the ways in which lives are to exist, and many of our understandings are incompatible. What are we to make of how you come across? Given the incompatibility, how could you rectify our Fa?" The cosmos *is* incredibly complex and awfully immense, and there are huge

context in this translation.

differences in the ways that lives exist, think, and understand life. Human beings think human beings are pretty good, but some gods think, “Human beings walking down the street with their arms swinging to and fro are so ugly.” (*Audience laughs*) “Look at my great wings and my lion-like body, it's so magnificent.” (*Audience laughs*) And there are even greater disparities between our understandings of lives and those of the gods in the distant, gigantic systems. [They might say,] “What you think of as good and bad is different here, so how can Fa-rectification determine good and bad here, where we are?” The differences among the beings [themselves] are also huge. The Great Law that I am imparting is the fundamental Great Law of the Cosmos that encompasses all. It's just that the manifestation takes the form of Buddha images and Buddhist principles. They don't know about these things, and that is why they think that way.

Then, put differently, doesn't the Fa-rectification affect the beings in all systems? If they are all included, then, well, the gods in those systems of beings don't know who you truly are, so will they let you do whatever you want? Since this is a matter involving the entire cosmos, how could they not get involved? Every system has its own, gigantic lord, so could that lord just sit there and watch? (*Teacher chuckles*) Actually, even with all of their knowledge combined, they know about only the things in *their* realms, and it's impossible for them to know about things that are beyond them, things that are higher in level or the final things. That is why they're thinking, “Since this matter involves us, how could we let you do whatever you want with us? I, like others, have countless sentient beings, and I too want to try to be chosen.” If [the gods in] all the systems in the gigantic cosmic body think that way, then doesn't that mean that all of the systems have done something toward Fa-rectification? Thus, this tiny little Earth became the cosmos's focal point in Fa-rectification.

I have often said that this Earth is the focal point of the cosmos's Fa-rectification, but no one can imagine just how mammoth this cosmic body is. You don't have a concept gigantic enough to comprehend it. It's absolutely enormous. Despite that, all of them established on Earth the ways in which they wanted to manifest. Specifically, mankind has gone through tens of millions of years—I'll just talk about recent times and not the distant past—and no matter how many years that may be, after the previous human civilization underwent degeneration and destruction, the people who remained entered this round of human existence, they started out in a condition in which there were no resources for living, and now they have journeyed to where they are today. In the lingo of modern science, they started out in the so-called “Stone Age.” But the theory of evolution is groundless, of course. In any event, the history that is relevant to the beings of this cycle spans close to ten thousand years, and about seven thousand years are relevant to recent civilization. That is, the history that has to do with the forming of this cycle of civilization is around seven thousand years. During this process, how the beings have acted and everything that has played out in history are directly related to the Fa-rectification. But what was done during ancient times was simply laying the foundation for people to be able to understand the Fa and the concept of gods, was defining how people should be and how people's thoughts and concepts should be, and [instilling in people] the extensive inner meanings of a culture, which includes how to discern good from bad, beauty from ugliness, kindness from wickedness, and so on. The entirety of this period's ancient history was a process of establishing human beings' thinking, and establishing their behavior. Today, how people behave, their concept of good and bad, what is considered good attire, how people think things over, how they treat their parents, how they deal with their friends and family, how they handle everything in society, and how they understand nature and the world at large—all of these things were established after long, drawn-out years. If not for this, people's minds would be blank or their thinking would be beast-like. If that was the case, how could I teach this Fa today? How would gods reincarnate into this world by way of human bodies? And how would gods regard human beings? So, human beings needed to be given a process whereby they established a sufficient understanding and became fully developed. Having gone through that, they

turned out as today's mankind.

But throughout human history, no matter how many thousands of years have been spanned, never has anything come about that resembles today's society. And that is because the past was for laying the foundation, whereas today things are being played out. In the past, mankind's life was fairly simple, whether in the East or the West. China was all along the main place where gods guided and disseminated culture. [China's] being dubbed the “Middle Kingdom”⁶ in recent times is a hint that pointed to this. Other places served as both the audience watching mankind's central stage and the supporting characters. That was the course and purpose of history. Then why is it that in recent times, suddenly all kinds of cultures, theories, and social phenomena have come about? This is the result of the various gigantic cosmic systems' things manifesting themselves in the lowest level, the human world, and their reason for doing this is so that they might be chosen. You know, whether in China or in the West, in ancient society, aside from the few major religions, no other sphere [of society] had an independent cultural system or form. For example, post-Renaissance music and fine art, the various theories in recent history, and how the different professions have manifested in society in recent history—including the positive and negative behavior of mankind—all of them came about overnight in an explosion of activity. The last nearly one hundred years, in particular, very quickly turned the human society that had existed for thousands of years into what it is today. It's a muddy human world, and yet many people are actually feeling quite pleased with themselves, and think that science has brought progress to mankind. Today's education leads people to solely base their thinking on the false theory of evolution and to believe that human beings evolved to this state, that society has achieved a high level of scientific advancement, and that mankind created its own civilization—created modern civilization. That's not the case at all. But the outcome is that many people are, under the influence of that kind of thinking, enjoying the science-wrought so-called civilization. And those who have been educated by modern science and who are atheists appear to have found the perfect setting, they find it so enjoyable! So they are indulging themselves to the fullest, and modern, deviated art forms abound, making this society seem really dazzling.

In fact, gods never wanted human beings to lead their lives like this. Human beings can't see the karmic retribution process in human society or the cause and effect of things, and so they don't consider the consequences of anything they do, as they are blind to the underlying reasons. As a result, they get no sense of satisfaction. Actually, no matter how glitzy society gets, even if the development surpasses that of today, people still won't be satisfied. Did gods have humans come into existence for the purpose of endlessly pursuing things? In the past, when someone had a fine horse, wow, he'd feel like he was a notch above everybody else. And when he rode that fine steed down the street, people would admiringly say, “Wow, what a great horse! Look how fine a horse that fella has.” They had the same feeling people do today when someone has a nice car. But today if somebody rode a horse down the street, people would find it strange, for people no longer have that concept. Nowadays, when people see someone driving a nice car they say, “Wow, what a great car, what a prized steed⁷ (*audience laughs, Teacher laughs*), that car is gorgeous.” Human beings can live in different circumstances yet still have the same feelings in their lives. If people had not been given this modern lifestyle, they wouldn't know what this state is like. Over the past few thousand years, when people lived in the normal state that human beings should be in, the interesting and delightful things in their lives gave them a sense of satisfaction just the same. In the cosmos, this is just the level that human beings are at. Nowadays people have cars, but when they find out about flying saucers, which don't require the energy we use

⁶ Note: This could also be translated as “Central Kingdom.”

⁷ Note: This is a play on words in Chinese. The two-character term here, rendered literally as “prized steed” (*baoma*), is in fact the Chinese term for “a BMW car.”

today and can rise in the air instantly and get to where one wants to go in a flash, well, [they will think] that's even more convenient! At that point who would want a car? "What good is a car? That's so obsolete!" (*Audience laughs*) In fact, if modern people were to really live that way, they wouldn't be satisfied then, either, and would continue to pursue even better things. Of course, whenever human beings are able to create something, that is gods at work, and not the result of those human beings' actions. What gods have given to human beings today was not meant to have them live like this. Their purpose is to exhibit the creations from their systems so that they can have a chance of being chosen. In other words, even though people have been pursuing things in their so-called research, those things are not acquired through human beings' pursuits. Human beings can't see through this delusion, they can't see the truth, and so they are indulging themselves to the fullest extent in modern society.

But these things were not given to people for their enjoyment. Gods never wanted to turn people into what they are today, for their purpose was to demonstrate themselves. Some people think they're leading such a nice life, almost as if they were in heaven; of course, that's nowhere close to what a god has, though. In these circumstances, people care even less about consequences, believe in gods even less, are even more prone to creating karma, and are destroying themselves even faster. And today's industry has severely polluted the ecological environment and caused matter itself to become warped. This is something that human society will never be able to resolve. And, it has severely affected other dimensions in the cosmos. Since the cosmos is a cyclical system, the things extracted by the beings in one dimension are further extracted by those in higher dimensions. When something that the lives of the human dimension extract is impure, then the things that are extracted in higher places all become, level by level, impure. So the deviation of modern human society, including the deviation of its notions, has had an effect on gods and caused even high-level beings to deviate. So why did the Fa-rectification of the cosmos need to happen? The occurrence of this deviation isn't limited to the human dimension, of course. Different things have happened even in gigantic cosmic bodies. Here I am just talking about the manifestations at this place of mankind.

In fact, the seemingly rich culture that has manifest in human society in recent times was actually brought here by gods from different cosmoses and distant gigantic cosmic bodies. Described in human terms, those are ways in which the beings of their systems sustain the systems. What they have brought over is the manifestation at the lowest level, that of human society, of the Fa-principles in their systems that determine the raising or lowering of a life's level. That's what all of those things are. Of course, with the guidance of Dafa, those things, those forms, can enable a life to ascend, just as they can make a not-so-good life drop. I was talking about the concept of a "Great Way without form," which led to this discussion. Have you thought about the fact that, if the many occupations and the many fields seen today were brought here from those distant systems of beings, and Dafa disciples are cultivating in this setting, with Dafa disciples cultivating in different occupations, then isn't it just like rectifying [those systems] with the Fa? Isn't that acknowledging their existence? Isn't that saving them?

Of course, it won't be possible for me to leave to mankind their demonstrations in human society. What we are saving are the lives in those systems. When anything gets to the place where human beings are, the level [here] makes it become very bad and low, so of course Dafa and Dafa disciples can't validate these low forms in and of themselves. Take religions, for example. Those who truly understand things are utilizing the formats taken by those religions to cultivate themselves, while those who don't are upholding the formats of those religions. In other words, what gods want are not the formats that mankind uses, but for you to utilize the formats here and ascend. When you elevate by making use of these formats, you are validating Fa, validating gods, and saving sentient beings, right? (*Applause*) Dafa disciples' cultivating in the diverse occupations is acknowledging the beings in those systems, and it is saving all those lives. I have said the following to you before: what I am imparting is the Great Law of the cosmos, which encompasses everything. Think about it then, isn't this Fa enormous? I

would say that it's so enormous it is formless, it is formless and yet it encompasses everything. (*Applause*) The Fa-rectification is rectifying all beings in the cosmos and doing everything possible to save all of the original things that were left here by gods.

At the beginning, no life knew what I was doing. The extra-terrestrial lives even thought that I was one of them. (*Audience laughs*) No one knew. That's why the gods in different realms have acted in such a way that they are ignoring the old forces' interference with my Fa-rectification. So I said before that the beings in the entire cosmos were committing sins when it came to this. I said that they were all indebted to me because I was saving them. This Fa is the foundation of all lives.

As a matter of fact, anything in human society, as long as I choose it, can be used for Dafa disciples' cultivation. Take music, for example, something I talked about before. If people are guided by Dafa as they study and compose music, they can make progress and have inspiration, and the things they will think of and come to see as being needed, will be divine revelations. So in other words, whichever field you might be in, when you are able to improve your skills, that is a reflection of your having continually risen in realm. And people can see that you are a good person and someone who cultivates his or her heart and mind. From the vantage point of human beings, you are becoming a good person. As a result of studying the Fa and cultivating your inner self, you do better and better, and gods give you the wisdom you deserve and give you inspiration so that you can come to realize a lot of things while you study, create better things, improve your technique, and reach beyond. Think about it, in human society, this can be done in any legitimate occupation, can't it? While you do well at work, you are cultivating yourselves—can't you improve that way? In today's society, I could choose any form as the format for your cultivation and enable your cultivation to be a success. (*Applause*) It's just that I didn't choose those things. I didn't choose those things for you. Instead, I chose the form of a Buddha, and to teach the Fa of the cosmos in a Buddhist format. And by way of the five exercises and the way of cultivation that I created, I taught you to cultivate, thereby saving all beings, including all Buddhas, Daos, Gods, and human beings. Since there are so many formats, I of course couldn't choose all of them. I chose a Buddhist format. But the truth is, what I am teaching is the Great Law of the cosmos. Even though it appears in the form of Buddhist principles and Fa, and I have taught it from the angle of Buddhist principles and Fa, what I am in fact teaching is the ultimate Great Law of the cosmos. The paths I am having you take in your cultivation are all of the paths of the great divine beings of the cosmos's different systems. Each and every thing is being rectified. Everything is encompassed by this Fa, isn't it? That's how the Great Law is.

I mentioned earlier that when the *Nine Commentaries* first came out, some people couldn't understand it, and said, “Aren't we getting involved in politics by doing this?” But what is politics? Suppose I, Li Hongzhi, were to really direct you to cultivate via politics—would you be able to cultivate to success? (*Applause*) You absolutely would. As long as, in the process of doing work, the cultivators constantly used Dafa to guide their cultivation and their effort to be good and then even better persons, and assimilated and tempered themselves in Dafa, then they would continually improve, continually elevate, and be able to achieve Consummation. If today I were to guide you to cultivate in the format of a king and his subjects, with you cultivating as subjects, could you cultivate that way? (*Applause*) You absolutely could, and you definitely could achieve Consummation just the same. It would just be a matter of how to walk on that path, how to be responsible to all beings, and how to enable beings to improve. As long as the guidance of this Great Law was followed, it could be achieved. When it comes to specific forms, I didn't choose those ones. Having come this far today, it wouldn't be possible for us to choose something else all over again. This is how we cultivate; this is the way in which we cultivate.

Being in the midst of ignorance and delusion, people can't see how enormous this Fa is. If someone could truly see it, the playing out of his attachments as he cultivates would be equivalent to sinning

against gods. Precisely because people cannot see, those don't count as sins. One person might be more diligent, while another might have a poorer understanding. (*Teacher chuckles*) Relatively speaking, the format of delusion loosens up [the requirements] for cultivation. Some people think, "It'd be so great if I knew it all and could see it all." Well, in that case, your cultivation path would be so narrow that you wouldn't be allowed to make even one bit of mistake. If you became completely enlightened, you wouldn't be considered somebody who is cultivating, and you wouldn't be allowed to cultivate. Before the persecution started on July 20, 1999, some Dafa disciples were in a state where they were at a high level of gradual enlightenment. They haven't been allowed to get involved in resisting the persecution. No one dares to persecute them, and they haven't gotten involved. If they joined forces they could stop this persecution, but they already know everything. What I was just talking about is the form of cultivation. Now that I've discussed it from this angle, I think your minds have broadened, you have quickly come to realize a lot of things, and now you have a better idea of how enormous this Great Law is and how weighty your responsibilities are.

Having said all this, I would like to go back and talk about something else. As Dafa disciples, you have an extraordinary past, and you should have an extraordinary present too. Sometimes, while validating the Fa, doing Dafa work in general, or in your own cultivation, many unsatisfactory things indeed exist. The most noticeable and biggest problem, which has gone unresolved for a long time, is also what the gods have been muttering in my ears, something that troubles them the most. But I have never emphasized it, and I haven't discussed it with strong words. Why is that? It's because Dafa disciples needed a little human courage as they were going about validating the Fa today. That is why I didn't talk about it. I wanted to save that discussion for the final time—I wanted to talk about it later on, when the time was more ripe. What is it, then? When Dafa disciples make mistakes, they do not like to be criticized. No one can criticize them, and when someone does, it sets them off. When they are right, they don't like others bringing up things they could improve on; when they are wrong, they don't want to be criticized. They get upset as soon as others criticize. The problem is becoming pretty bad. (*Applause*)

Why have I waited until now to talk about it? When you were validating the Fa and exposing the evil earlier on, I didn't want you to be too soft when doing things; in that case as you clarified the truth you would have been apt to do so at less than full strength. It would be a problem if, when others commented [negatively] as you clarified the truth, you just stopped right there, without giving any explanation. Now that you have become mature and rational, and know how to handle things, and now that [discussing this matter] will not affect your truth clarification, I am talking about what I had saved for today. The problem you have with this is sticking out quite prominently now. As cultivators, think about it—I've talked about this in *Zhuan Falun* and in my earlier teachings on Fa—I have said, "Don't hit back when hit, don't talk back when insulted." When others mistreat you, you should respond with just a smile and let that be the end of it. And when others are embroiled in conflict and you are just an onlooker, you should think about it, "How can I do better? If I were in that position, would I be able to control my *xinxing* and face the criticism and disapproval like a cultivator?" Cultivation is about looking inside yourself. Whether you are right or wrong, you should examine yourself. Cultivation is about getting rid of human attachments. If you always reject reproaches and criticism, always point your fingers at others, and always refute others' disapproval and criticism, is that cultivating? How is that cultivating? You have grown used to focusing on other people's shortcomings, and never take examining your own self seriously. When others' cultivation one day meets with success, what about you? Isn't Master hoping that *you* are cultivating well? Why won't you accept criticism, and why do you keep focusing on other people? Why not cultivate inward and examine your own self? Why do you get agitated when you are criticized? How many of you seated here can keep at ease when someone points at you out of the blue and berates you? How many of you can stay unruffled and search for the

reason on your part when faced with others' criticism and chiding?

This is not to blame you—it's not that my Dafa disciples haven't done well. (*Teacher chuckles*) About this, now, it is actually because Master allowed that bit of thing to remain in you. But now that I have discussed it today, from now on you must begin to take this problem very seriously. (*Applause*) Of late, some students have often sent me notes, letters, or messages telling about how wrong such-and-such persons were (*audience laughs*), or what problems such-and-such persons have. I know what's going on—very well. Cultivate yourselves. I don't want the environment Dafa disciples have to become one in which people point fingers at each other. I want the environment to be one in which everyone can accept criticism and at the same time look inside themselves. If everyone cultivates himself, everyone looks within, and everyone cultivates himself well, won't the conflicts be few? This is a principle I have taught all along, going back to when I first began teaching the Fa. Isn't that so? Improvement for a cultivator definitely doesn't result from finger pointing, nor does it result from my criticism of you as your Master or from your pointing fingers at or criticizing each other. It comes from you cultivating yourself. Now that Master has spoken about this in today's teaching of Fa here, from this point on you must start to take this matter seriously. (*Enthusiastic Applause*)

Be mentally prepared (*audience laughs*), you might run into these things as soon as you return home. But before you run into it, you won't know it is coming. (*Audience laughs*) When conflicts come about, you won't be treated like gods, nor will things manifest in some divine way. They will all appear ordinary, and all have the same form as the conflicts ordinary people have with one another. And your saving face certainly won't be something taken into consideration. Myself, Li Hongzhi, aside, no one will get any sort of special treatment. What comes about definitely won't go beyond the parameters of the laws at this level. So, everything will manifest in the forms specific to this human plane. On this point, I think that since you are Dafa disciples who have studied the Fa and cultivated for quite some time now, when it comes to the more detailed principles, you know them, and you are aware of them, without my having to discuss them.

The problem has become quite prominent. Did you know, over the last several years high-level beings have been repeatedly muttering in my ears about this? I didn't budge, though. I needed Dafa disciples to have the courage to reveal the truth as they went about validating the Fa, and so I didn't talk about it. I wanted to pick a time, an adequate opportunity, to do so, to discuss this issue. Today is the right time, so I singled it out. In passing, I will tell you that this thing has become quite pronounced for us overall. With some people it has gotten so bad that nobody can say a word about them. It looks like I can't go any longer without addressing it. Some people have become like matches—one stroke and they ignite. They're like land mines—one step and they detonate. [They are acting like,] “You can't criticize me. I can't take any criticism.” They no longer listen to any expression of disapproval or disagreement, whether it was meant out of good or ill will, was intentional or unintentional; they reject everything flat out, and even less do they examine themselves. It has gotten quite severe. I'm not blaming you, but from now on you all must pay attention to this. You must get to the point where you are able to take criticism, regardless of who it's from. If there is truth to it you correct yourself, and if not, you are mindful of it. If you can stay unruffled while being criticized or chided, you are improving. (*Applause*)

We often have students who say, “Some students know they have certain shortcomings and problems, but they still won't let others criticize them.” Of course, I'm not suggesting that you all go criticize others. But when others do see a problem, or see that a problem might affect your clarifying the truth or might hamper your working together, they should point it out. My Law Bodies may give you hints through the mouth of another student. You have gone through such a long process of cultivation, and you've put in so much. You have truly worked hard. I see everything you have done. It's truly extraordinary. But that said, this is something that attests on a fundamental level to whether someone is

in essence a cultivator; so that which leads you to not take criticism, that thing has to be removed. Even if you have done well in all other areas and are lousy only in this one regard, you are still not a cultivator. In the past, cultivators would work on this issue first, and it was a qualification for being chosen as a disciple. I did the same before the persecution of Dafa disciples began on July 20, 1999. After July 20, 1999, I didn't emphasize it. Today I am raising the issue again, and with this, I am eliminating for you the physical substance that has formed. (*Applause*) But you need to correct the tendency you have formed—you must. Be sure to pay heed! From this point on, whoever can't take criticism is not being diligent, whoever can't take criticism is not displaying the state of a cultivator, or at least on this issue. (*Applause*) If someone still can't pass this test, I'll tell you, he is in a very dangerous situation, because for a cultivator this is the most fundamental thing, it's at the top of the list of things to eliminate, and it *has to* be eliminated. If you don't get rid of it, you won't achieve Consummation. Don't let it become that it's ordinary people doing the work of Dafa disciples. You want to achieve Consummation, not good fortune.

If ordinary people want to do Dafa things, can they do so? They already have. [Some people will tell you,] “I called out 'Dafa is great,' and I handed out flyers.” When an ordinary person has done what Dafa disciples do, and yet he doesn't cultivate, will he be able to Consummate the way Dafa disciples do? No, he won't. But he has done such a huge thing, and at this historic juncture no less. So how will this being be viewed? He will really gain good fortune in return, immensely good fortune. I should hope that those of you sitting here, who have cultivated for so long, don't end up with a return of good fortune, right? (*Audience laughs*) What is in store for you are things even greater, more splendid, and all that are truly extraordinary for a life to have. So Dafa disciples' cultivation is not about securing the reward of good fortune. From now on, alongside your interactions with ordinary people, you need to make deep-going improvements when it comes to how you interact with fellow Dafa disciples. Now that I have said all of this, you need to follow through and make it happen. (*Enthusiastic Applause*)

I will mention something in passing. In recent times there has been an issue, and it pertains to Dafa disciples in regions other than just the notable case of North America... many Dafa disciples have been involved in selling tickets and preparing for the New Tang Dynasty TV Chinese New Year Gala. The weather was cold, so it was hard work that you did, and you put your hearts into it. I saw that in order to promote ticket sales, Dafa disciples performed in the streets wearing thin clothes in the freezing cold. Perhaps because you were all doing that, you didn't think much of it. But it was different in the eyes of gods. And as your Master, I too was quite moved. You are amazing. Speaking of this, I will talk about why the global Chinese Gala is so important. Do you realize what major things ride on this Chinese New Year Global Gala?

The wicked CCP has always made the performing arts its tool for promoting Party culture and brainwashing and indoctrinating China's people. People from mainland China all know that every year it puts together that “[CCTV] Spring Festival” show, and that all of the programs glorify the vile Party, and are highly political. But New Tang Dynasty TV's Chinese New Year Gala is even bigger—it's called “The Chinese New Year Global Gala.” “Global”—that includes mainland China, of course. So, think about it, isn't this a huge thing? “Global” means international. And if it's international, then it has to be up to international caliber, right? Our students are truly remarkable, considering how they've managed to present the galas of the past few years so well and achieved such high quality. No matter how the overall quality was or how the individual performances were, at a minimum, people couldn't make out any noticeable flaws. (*Teacher laughs*) (*Audience laughs, applaud*) The feedback has been very positive. That's why the requirements are high for each of the performers, choreographers and directors, composers, orchestras, and so on. So with certain things we need to start from the basics. Also, as you know, I said something before: Whether it be the overall effect of the Gala, a song that is sung, or a music note that's played, all of these things that Dafa disciples do have the effect of

validating the Fa in other dimensions. The energy emitted is quite strong, and it dissolves evil. Another thing is, the people of the future will follow what today's Dafa disciples do. Dafa disciples are taking the lead in leaving a certain culture for the future people, and they are cleansing out the vile party's culture, aren't they? That is why the vile CCP has been so sinister and tried to make trouble. The performances have the direct effect of validating the Fa and saving sentient beings. Their impact is thus quite significant, and their effects are quite good. If we could keep doing this non-stop, instead of having just a few shows, like at present, if we could put on more shows, then think about how many sentient beings would be saved! Do you realize, when those who have watched the Gala walk out of the theatre, any and all bad thoughts they had have been dissolved? All of their bad thoughts are gone. *(Applause)* That's why people found it so powerful.

That's all I will say. Of course, I know you want to hear more. *(Teacher chuckles)* *(Applause)* I know that during this period of time you do have many issues in cultivation, and there are different opinions among our students. I will take some time now to answer your questions. You can pass your question slips up. *(Applause)* So that we can resolve some concrete issues here, I want to ask that students who wish to submit question slips weigh their questions and gauge whether they should be asked. *(Teacher chuckles)* Otherwise you might pass up a whole pile of slips, and we wouldn't be able to get through them all. Now you can go ahead and pass up your slips.

Question: We have been clarifying the truth and exposing the evil from the angle of human rights by regularly sending emails to mainstream society, governments, and organizations in different countries, and have had great results. We now have a database that contains millions of addresses. Some people think that this precious resource of ours should be used primarily for our main tasks, which are clarifying the truth and exposing the evil, while others think we should maximally utilize this resource by using it to send out other things such as event notices, announcements, Gala promotions, and communications on activities related to the advocacy of human rights in China, etc. This is a specific question, but it's very important, because if it's not handled well it could have a negative effect.

Teacher: You first have to be clear about what you are doing today. You are saving sentient beings, so things that are unrelated to saving sentient beings are not among the things you need to do. Once you have told people the facts about the persecution of Dafa disciples and about Dafa, the other things are less important.

Of course, these specific matters should be looked at case-by-case. Motivating them to join ordinary people's rights advocacy movements is not a responsibility Dafa disciples have. The media you run can focus somewhat on those activities, provide information on them to the public, and expose the vile CCP. There's one thing you must be clear on, though. The purpose of your existence is not for rights advocacy efforts; rather, the rights advocacy efforts have taken place to assist Dafa disciples in validating the Fa. *(Applause)* You need to keep your priorities straight! If you are promoting Gala tickets, that of course is meant to help them learn about Dafa and Dafa disciples. *(Teacher smiles)*

Question: We have an idea. We are thinking about making documentaries on contemporary times in China and on China's recent history that could be popularized, and we would do so to correct the wrong ideas people have about history.

Teacher: Yes, I know about those things. You may go ahead and do them.

Question: How can we determine which are the right historical materials, and draw the right conclusions from them?

Teacher: When it comes to the historical facts, if there are documentaries [for you to refer to], that would be best, for they won't be false. If you learn about things by collecting documentation from a

variety of sources, then I think you will arrive at the most correct conclusions. One thing you have to be mindful of is that the things put out by the vile CCP are all false, so you shouldn't believe them. All these years, that vile Party has been deceiving the Chinese people, deceiving the ordinary citizens.

Question: We have received a lot of positive feedback as we've gone about clarifying the facts and exposing the evil to grassroots organizations in mainstream Western society. Some people have asked us what specific actions they could take. For this reason, we established a conscience foundation so that people of conscience who are not practitioners but want to support us could get involved. We have a question: If someone wants to donate money to victimized Dafa disciples, how should we get such donations to those disciples and coordinate these things? And how should we handle donations and collection of funds in the future?

Teacher: I spoke to you about this very early on when I taught the Fa. I said that in Dafa cultivation you cannot collect funds or accumulate material things; doing that would only encourage attachments, which is not at all good for your cultivation. Besides, you are cultivating in ordinary society, so you don't need to be provided for by ordinary people. Of course, we do have some Dafa disciples who are monks or nuns, but their situation is unique. I am only talking about things in general here. So under these circumstances, I absolutely forbid any collection of funds—you cannot solicit or collect funds from the students, nor can you solicit funds from the public like other religions do. We don't do any of those things.

But the situation has changed since the start of the persecution on July 20, 1999. Dafa disciples need funds to clarify the truth and save sentient beings, but their personal incomes are limited and the persecution has lasted for a long time. A lot of money is needed to solve this problem and expose the persecution. At the very least, you need funds to print flyers. And the TV network, radio stations, and newspapers all require funds. Many other things, many projects, require funds, too. Given this situation, I said to Dafa disciples who are in charge of certain projects that we could ask for sponsorship only from the governments of various countries, different kinds of foundations, or big corporations. But in fact, the old forces have been vehemently obstructing things in this regard. Over the past few years there has been a great deal of interest in investing in China, and many countries have invested there, so they don't dare to give Falun Gong any financial support for fear that the CCP might give their companies a hard time. So it looks like they are betraying their consciences when economic interests are at stake. That being the case, it's very hard to get funds from them.

Many of our students have found in the process of their truth-clarification that there are indeed some very good people out there who, when they became aware of the evilness of this persecution, have offered to donate some money to the students. What should we do in these cases? I still tell you the same thing: Try your best not to solicit donations from the public, don't do that. If someone sincerely insists on offering the donation, then it's fine to accept it, and you can use it where it is most needed and where funds are lacking. That's about it. I don't advise you to do it, but if someone genuinely insists on offering a donation, then sometimes they might find it odd if you don't accept it. In that case, accept it. Sometimes you can save people only when the things you do are understandable to them. So if you really run into a situation like that, then just accept [the donation].

However, make sure the funds are not handled inappropriately. I know we have had problems with the management of funds for some projects and in some places. I don't want to get into that, though. If there is a problem with you in this regard, it seems to me that you don't want to cultivate anymore. All the gods are watching you. If a cultivator has this problem, it is terribly serious.

Question: How should we properly handle the relationship between people's rights advocacy efforts

*meant to end persecution, and encouraging people to carry out the “Three Withdrawals”?*⁸

Teacher: [By encouraging] the “Three Withdrawals,” you are saving people, saving sentient beings, and saving the people of mainland China. This is not an issue outside of mainland China. As I have said, when the entire wicked Eastern European Communist Bloc crumbled, the people there did what they should—they made it crumble. The people in mainland China have yet to take this action, so for them to wash themselves clean they must dissociate themselves from the evil CCP's wicked organizations.

As I said earlier, rights advocacy movements are ordinary people's affairs, and Falun Gong is absolutely not a political group. You must keep this clear in your minds: Whether it be those from mainland China who have come over to the good side, or those who have stepped forward and spoken out for Falun Gong, it's because gods have arranged for them to assist Dafa disciples, and it is definitely not that Dafa disciples are supposed to be assisting them. It's not a problem for our media to give them more coverage and show concern about them. But you shouldn't confuse your priorities, nor should you confuse what you are and aren't supposed to do. You must be clear on these things! We're not an ordinary people's political group, so you can't devote yourselves completely to those things. But you can use your media to report on them and expose the persecution. Of course, some people have been persecuted directly because they have stepped forward and spoken out for Falun Gong. In that case you can pay more attention to and give more coverage to those stories; in particular, you should keep tabs on their safety. There is no problem with doing any of those things. The key is that you must be clear—listen carefully, now—that it's fine for you to help them do certain things, but you have to be clear that those things have happened for the purpose of assisting you, and that cultivation and saving sentient beings are first and foremost for you. (*Applause*)

Question: Can the formulas for the five exercises be translated into other languages?

Teacher: When they were working on the English translation early on, I said that the Fa-rectification formulas were not to be translated. Why can't they be translated, then? The Fa-rectification formulas are linked to the sound in the cosmos, many factors in the cosmos, and messages in the cosmos. Only by articulating and activating them will the huge impact be generated that comes about from the concerted assistance of the cosmos. They won't have that effect if the sound is changed. Gods understand them. They know what you are articulating even when you don't make any sound and only think it. If you want to have a direct impact, it won't work, however, [unless you produce the right sound]. That is why I have told you not to translate them.

Actually, as I've been saying for quite some time, the Chinese culture is one that gods have passed down among human beings. It is a semi-divine culture. That's why a lot of the elements of that culture have profound content. The languages and scripts of other ethnic groups, by contrast, do not exist in the heavens. The Chinese characters, though, are very similar to those in the heavens. The way of writing them is the same as it is in the heavens, but the combinations of strokes are different. The written forms of the other ethnic groups' languages aren't present in the heavens. When people see heavenly gods show certain things to human beings by writing something for them in the languages of certain ethnic groups, it's actually a case of gods transforming things for human beings into words they are able to understand, that's all. Being a semi-divine culture, the Chinese culture isn't entirely divine nor entirely non-divine—it's that way.

Question: The occupations that Dafa disciples don't perform will not exist [in the future], right? (Audience laughs) Such as being secret agents, for example? (Audience laughs)

⁸ Note: This refers to withdrawing from the CCP, the Youth League, and the Young Pioneers.

Teacher: Right, as I've said before, secret agents won't exist in the future—their future has been rescinded. *(Applause)* As to whether other occupations will exist, as far as I know it looks like Dafa disciples are actually in all occupations. I know that there are disciples at the presidential level, and there are disciples with very high social status; it's just that they do things differently. The Dafa disciples in mainland China are in all trades and professions; in every occupation there are people cultivating Dafa.

Question: Since the evil specter of communism first appeared in the Paris Commune, does it still have its root there? Does it still exist in Paris and France in particular? And what influence does it have now?

Teacher: Its root is not there; its root was in China, but it has already been uprooted. The entire evil specter of the vile Party, the entire red, evil dragon, has already been shattered. And the factors it has long established in the minds of the people and in every cultural sphere—all of those things are being cleaned out as well, they are in the process of being cleaned out. As far as [its influence on] other countries, well, it has no direct impact on countries that aren't [ruled by] the vile Party.

Question: Could you please tell us more about the role of the Minghui website, and particularly the role of its counterparts in multiple other languages?

Teacher: Minghui's main feature is that it reports primarily on the facts of the persecution of Dafa disciples in mainland China. Those reports are first-hand information that exposes the evil, and over 99 percent—or even up to 100 percent—of the reported information is accurate. It is distinct from the other, conventional media. You can translate the facts [it reports] into multiple languages and post them on the Internet. If you have the ability and the resources, you can do that, and you can create Minghui websites in multiple languages so that people all over the world can see the daily content on Minghui.

Question: Is it possible for the old forces to plant negative beings in the assistant souls (fu yuanshen) of Dafa disciples?

Teacher: Don't think so much about these things. *(Audience laughs)* It is true that the old forces have taken advantage of every chance they have gotten. They have done awful things even to the Dafa disciples whom I really guided and led in history. All the same, as long as Dafa disciples can follow the requirements for validating the Fa and the requirements of Dafa, there won't be any problems.

Question: If possible, is it all right for the Dafa disciples around that practitioner to send forth righteous thoughts together in order to completely negate and eliminate those things?

Teacher: This is something that's already included when you send forth righteous thoughts and cleanse yourselves of bad factors. You started doing this a long while ago.

Question: Would Master please talk about the effect the mechanisms put in place by the old forces' dial have on Dafa disciples' efforts to save sentient beings?

Teacher: There is a dial in every dimension, and the dials are in fact a manifestation of the past cosmos's Fa. They run through from the microcosm to the macrocosm; that is, these dials run through dimensions from those made up of microcosmic particles to those composed of the largest particles, which are at the surface level. And they have an axis. That is a manifestation of the Fa of the past cosmos. It won't be like this in the future. *(Teacher smiles)* That's why I could tell sentient beings about it. But they made a special dial for the Fa-rectification, and in every dimension they have done certain things surreptitiously. They have even involved the world's people, and planted this kind of dial in humans' bodies. That is why when [the dial] moves, shifts in the state of affairs for human beings on Earth take place. It's exactly because those things are at work. During the Fa-rectification those things

are all in the process of being cleaned out, so they no longer play a decisive role.

Question: How is the maturity, achieved from a tempering process, of Dafa disciples as a whole related to the conclusion of Fa-rectification?

Teacher: The way things look now is that they seem to be basically progressing in parallel.

Question: If wicked secret agents break into our homes, can we defend ourselves? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: Yes, it's all right for you to defend yourselves. Actually, though, when you have very strong righteous thoughts, you can even immobilize them. (*Applause*) But if, being a cultivator, your mind is instead impure and lacks righteous thoughts, and you are fearful inside, then you won't be able to make that happen.

Question: How does the Divine Land Marching Band save sentient beings? Would you give us some explicit guidance on that? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: Since you're interested I will tell you about it. (*Applause*) You know, when the band took part in the parades in New York's Chinatown and Flushing areas, on both occasions I saw this scene: When the band was playing, the energy they emitted was tremendous. Be it the energy emitted, the sounds you made, or the music and notes themselves, they all had the effect of validating the Fa and sending out energy.

That day during the Chinatown parade, countless gods in every dimension of the heavens—gods filling the sky—were beating military drums. And many, many heavenly soldiers and generals were charging forward. And the energy emitted as Dafa disciples played the wind instruments was very powerful. You've seen in the movies how the blast waves produced by the explosion of an atomic bomb are huge, right? Well, [the energy emitted] was even more powerful than that. (*Applause*) That's because the components of the energy emitted by the Dafa disciples were bigger than atoms, and the particles at every level of it were all very powerful. In other words, at the time, whenever the sound came forth a large area was covered in bright light. It takes some time for the blast of an atomic bomb to end, and then the blast waves generate a huge dust storm, right? And the area becomes clean only after the dust storm dies down. [In our case,] the area became clean instantly. And then far away from the bright lights there was a huge amount of smoke and dust from the blast, and as the music continued to be played the bright lights rapidly intensified. Quickly the area became clean again, and smoke and dust continually rose up in the distance. Wherever the bright lights reached, it became clean.

That's why when the band proceeded down the streets in the parade, the many people who were watching—and I was watching those ordinary people's minds—they were basically numb. (*Audience laughs*) And the Chinese people were just watching, expressionless. Their minds were blank. “What's going on,” [they wondered]. Their bad thoughts were all cleaned out, and afterward they started to think again (*applause*) and said, “Wow, Falun Gong is so amazing!” (*Audience laughs*) Some people said, “Wow, how did Falun Gong suddenly put together such a big band in the U.S.?” (*Audience laughs*) It's considered a big band even for the U.S. [The people felt that,] out of the blue so many people appeared, playing all these wind instruments! And particularly notable was that the band was made up of mostly Chinese faces. There were a small number of Western Dafa disciples, so most of the faces were Chinese. So the Chinese people in Chinatown were all thinking about it after they saw it, and they actually felt that [the band] had made Chinese people look good. (*Audience laughs*) That is, the antagonistic things in their minds were gone. The thoughts that played a negative role were gone. [The band] was truly having this impact. This is about the Chinese [spectators]. It was quite an unusual sight for Westerners as well—they had never seen anything like that before. [They felt,] out of the blue a big band showed up, with so many Chinese faces! A lot of people were applauding and shouting,

“Encore!” So the effect has been great.

Of course, the band has Dafa disciples of other ethnic groups as well, and they, too, are remarkable, for Dafa disciples are one body. When the students who are part of the band were playing, they themselves were actually moved. They felt it was truly sacred.

Question: Can next year's Gala tour internationally?

Teacher: Next year's things will have to depend on the situation. If our financial resources aren't so large, it won't be achievable. You know, it's very expensive for a hundred or several dozen people to travel.

Question: Having been influenced by the CCP, some officials in Western society have acted poorly. When we clarify the facts to them, can we tell them that they act more like a CCP official than an official from a democratic country?

Teacher: Sure, that's fine. It's hard to say who the vile CCP's evil specter might control. It could be a Western official or a Chinese one. When a person's thinking is in line with it, it will control him or her.

Question: Should we believe that the Fa will give us wisdom? Is taking ordinary classes worth it? Recently I have run into some problems with my writing project. I'm wondering whether I need to improve my writing skills or if there are other reasons.

Teacher: If what you are creating is on the right path, there will be less difficulties; if it's not on the right path, it will be more difficult. Or, when there's a problem with your understanding of something, there will be more difficulties; and when your understanding is free of problems, it will be less difficult. That's for sure. Dafa disciples have brought about many miracles. You can go and learn certain things. That is not a problem, of course. But if you plan to spend a lot of time—say, months or years—to learn something and then come back to validate the Fa, then I would say things would be over by then. *(Audience laughs)* And you would have learned it in vain. That's why I think that when it comes to certain matters you should think things over and gauge things yourself. As a Dafa disciple, you should think about these things as would a cultivator.

Question: Are the Nine Commentaries important for Vietnamese people? Do Vietnamese need to withdraw from the Communist Party?

Teacher: Be it Vietnam, Cuba, or North Korea—when China's communist regime falls, they will fall too. Their existence was arranged to inflate the CCP's morale a bit. If the CCP were really left all by itself, those [CCP] people wouldn't be able to so much as lift their heads before the world. The fact is, this is the old forces' arrangement. What disciples of Dafa care about is cultivating themselves; it's because the vile CCP started to persecute Falun Gong that Dafa disciples have been, in response to the vile CCP's persecution, exposing it and dismantling its persecution. The root is in China. When the CCP's factors disintegrate, all those others will disintegrate. There is no need to do anything about them specifically. Although those are all societies under the vile Party's rule, no persecution of Dafa disciples has taken place there. So you don't need to make a priority of them. In the future, when the CCP collapses, all of them will collapse and be done with. So right now we won't touch them.

Question: Many Dafa disciples have created a lot of excellent artistic things like music, poems, and songs. Can we introduce them to the general public after some artistic touch-up and polishing?

Teacher: That's a good idea, of course. If all people started singing our songs or music, wouldn't that be great? If a lot of people around the world, including the people in mainland China, all wore T-shirts with “Falun Dafa is Great” on them, I'd say the vile CCP would really be at a loss for what to do. *(Audience laughs)* Some people have suggested writing “Falun Dafa is Great” or “Withdraw from the

Party” on Renminbi.⁹ (*Audience laughs*) I think that's a terrific idea. (*Applause*) You can't throw away money, and you can't destroy it. (*Audience laughs*)

Question: All Dafa disciples from the Haidian district of Beijing send their greetings to Master. Master, we miss you very much! (**Teacher:** Thank you!) (*Applause*) Please be assured, Master, that we will definitely do the three things well and live up to our esteemed Master's expectations! (**Teacher:** I believe you.) (*Applause*)

Teacher: If that had been said a few years back, I would have felt that the students were trying to cheer me up. (*Teacher smiles*) Now I feel that it is true, and I believe it.

Question: How can we save homosexuals more effectively?

Teacher: They are sentient beings, so save them just like the other ordinary sentient beings. Save them if you can, and treat them just like anyone else. The more you regard them as a special group, the less you will be able to save them. Just save them as you would any other persons. Save them if you can. If you can't, then you can't.

Question: In an exercise instruction video recorded before, there is footage of Master teaching the Fa at the [Chinese People's] Public Security University with the flag of the evil Party hanging in the back of the auditorium. Should we remove it somehow? Or should we keep it as a historic record?

Teacher: It's all right to remove it. [It was there] because at the time [I] really didn't want to regard the CCP as the most wicked thing and destroy it, as all beings are given a chance. It is because the vile CCP has persecuted Falun Gong that it became, in relation to all beings in the cosmos, a wicked demon. And that is why it needs to be destroyed and cleaned out—that is their own choice.

Question: Should disciples in other regions offer support to the San Francisco Chinatown as they have done with New York City?

Teacher: I think that if a disciple has the ability and the right conditions, then he or she can go lend a hand. I discussed this with the practitioners in charge in San Francisco.

Question: Someone obtained the Fa and withdrew from the Party, but out of fear he was disrespectful of Dafa and has now passed away. Do people like this still have a future?

Teacher: That depends on the specifics of the situation. For a Dafa disciple, withdrawing from the Party isn't the most important thing; rather, saving sentient beings and having sentient beings withdraw from Party is. As far as whether someone like this still has a future, well, the fact that he obtained the Fa but didn't validate the Fa is regarded as the most important.

Question: Everyone who saw the Gala this year said it was good. Can we ask the disciples in mainland China to circulate it widely, and to touch the hearts and souls of a large number of sentient beings this way?

Teacher: Yes, you can do that.

Question: Master, you have said that eighty percent of the things that were decided in a pre-historical time have been sabotaged by the old forces. Will this affect how supremely wonderful, in-harmony, and forever-indestructible the future cosmos will be—as originally intended?

Teacher: What they have destroyed were only things that had been planned. They can't see what the new cosmos is like, even if they want to. Besides, after a Dafa disciple Consummates his cultivation and becomes a God or Buddha, when he wants to create a world of his own, he can do it with just one

⁹ Note: The currency used in mainland China.

thought, for his Fa is already established. So, none of [what you brought up] is a problem, and those are all trivial things. As for how much they have destroyed and how much has been lost, it all depends on whether something is wanted. Whatever is wanted can be formed, even to the extent such that it is completely restored without a tad bit of difference.

Question: About half a year ago some disciples started a project. But because the person(s) in charge would not get rid of his jealousy, interference came about and made it terribly hard for the other disciples involved to blaze our own path. Over the course of things, the approaches and tactics used have been pretty awful, and they're tainted with the Party culture. Also, most of [the team members] have always relied on the person(s) in charge and the Dafa Association, so that fact led to their having worse misunderstandings of the rest of us. I didn't explain a lot of things at the time, because as I understood then, it was not only for me to cultivate, but also for my fellow practitioners to cultivate. But I failed to realize that the evil was racing with us against time. All of this resulted in the predicament we now have, and I don't know what to do.

Teacher: You should look more into whether your own thinking is right. In a conflict, the more unfavorable the other person's behavior is toward you, the easier it is for you to think that he's wrong—"He's definitely wrong." Cultivation is a very involved thing, and getting rid of human attachments is the hardest. Try harder to look inside yourself, and just look for your *own* attachments. Everyone should examine himself and try to work well with one another. That's the most important thing.

It's all right to raise some reasonable suggestions on certain, specific issues. But you should also consider whether the point you would like to raise fits the larger situation. The person in charge has his challenges, too. When you're not in his shoes, you don't view things from his perspective. Many of our practitioners come straight from the academic world, and they have never done any managerial work; they lack that experience. So leading a project is a test for them. Moreover, I've read the letters some students have written to me. Although the letters spoke of other people's problems, between the lines what came across were the shortcomings in the writer's own cultivation. Some of them still had very strong attachments, some were even quite extreme, and some spoke to me with a human mindset, venting their indignation. Coordinators must listen to valid suggestions, and those who are not in charge must do a good job of cooperating on things. You are cultivating, not doing some job for the sake of doing that job.

Of course, you should still voice your opinions or call attention to any problems you see when that's the right thing to do. But you should act like a Dafa disciple in everything you do. Those of you coordinating a project should, like others, examine yourselves when you hear [criticism or different opinions], and you should cultivate yourselves well just as others do. Only then will the things you do be sacred.

Question: Dafa disciples from Ziyang city and Chengdu city of Sichuan province, Yili of the Xinjiang Autonomous Region, Harbin city, Nanjing city, Nanning city of Guangxi province, Yichang city and Huanggang city of Hubei province, Jiayuguan city of Gansu province, Liujia of Liaoning province, Kaian of Jilin province, Hangzhou city, Shanxi province, Shaoguan city, Fuzhou city, Ji'an city, Alabama, Houston, and Seattle in the United States, the Feitian School of Dance, Toronto of Canada, Singapore, New Zealand, Japan, and Chiba of Japan send their greetings to our great, compassionate Master!

Teacher: Thank you all! (*Applause*) Dafa disciples in mainland China and those elsewhere are basically progressing at the same pace now. There was a certain gap in the past—in particular, a few years ago the gap was quite big. Recently I've seen that the mainland China Dafa disciples have become more and more mature and composed. In this regard, then, Dafa disciples outside of mainland

China—that is, the Dafa disciples in other regions of the world and of other ethnicities—let's make sure you don't get left behind by the mainland China Dafa disciples. *(Applause)* You have to work hard!

Question: Master, democracy activists inside and outside of China are supporting the hunger strikes initiated in mainland China that are calling for rights. Should the Dafa disciples in mainland China take part in those so as to support Dafa disciples' freedom of belief?

Teacher: As I said earlier, cultivation and saving of sentient beings are first and foremost for Dafa disciples—these are things that they have to do. As far as the things you mentioned coming about, they are in fact meant to assist Dafa disciples. Of course, when a lawyer who has petitioned on behalf of Dafa disciples is being persecuted by the vile Party, we should lend support. It is all right to assist them with certain things, but you should make sure you don't go overboard. You are not a political group. You are cultivators.

Question: Some Western Dafa disciples have fully devoted themselves to working on The Epoch Times in Western languages, to the point where they don't even have time to participate in the other activities organized by Dafa disciples or Fa conferences. Some Chinese fellow practitioners think the Western disciples are bogged down by being attached to doing things. Master, when we have a relatively large number of important Dafa events going on, can we be less particular about the newspaper's quality and get it done quickly (audience laughs), so that we may take part in other activities?

Teacher: Everyone laughed. If you don't ensure its quality, can it still play a good role in saving sentient beings? *(Audience laughs)* You can't do that. Then what should be done? Right now we do have challenges. The challenges might be temporary, though. We lack human and financial resources, so we're bound to have only a very small number of Dafa disciples busy working on it. Master is well aware of this. Actually, early on, the Chinese language *Epoch Times* was like this too. But it's not going to last. Certain things might be temporarily delayed for a period of time. Or, you can come up with a way to resolve [the challenges] by helping each other. When it comes to these specific things, I think you should resolve them by discussing them among yourselves.

Question: All Dafa disciples from Langfang, Hebei province send their greetings to Master! The disciples miss Master greatly!

Teacher: Thank you! I thank the Dafa disciples in the Langfang area! *(Applause)*

Question: In mainland China, some disciples have repeatedly been unlawfully jailed and persecuted with torture, but they remain steadfast and diligent; whereas some other disciples still haven't managed to step forward since they have either felt powerless about the persecution or sought ease. Master, are the disciples who have been repeatedly persecuted sacrificing and bearing for the disciples who can't step forward?

Teacher: No, that's not the case. Personal cultivation is the individual's own affair. Do what you can to see what the situation is with those who haven't stepped forward, and try to help them out.

Question: Perseverance and willpower are inherent and predestined. My willpower is weak. When I clench my teeth and make up my mind to try hard, I can do well for a few days, but not long. I'm very frustrated by this, and I don't know what my problem is. I tried hard to study the Fa and memorize the Fa, but saw no improvement. Is it because the thinking of improving my willpower through studying the Fa is a form of pursuit, or is it because I haven't studied the Fa enough? If the fundamental reason is that I don't treasure myself, is there still any hope for me?

Teacher: If it's a Dafa disciple who cultivates himself very well and who manages to rationally understand what Dafa is, he will surely work at it with considerable effort and not let up when it comes

to this. On the other hand, those who are not diligent are likewise studying the Fa, and they know that the Fa is very good, but their thinking is not grounded in the Fa and they don't have ample righteous thoughts. So, naturally their understanding is not high; that is, they can't truly understand the preciousness of the Fa. That's why they're not all that motivated.

Question: Is eating raw fish killing?

Teacher: Eating fish that other persons have killed, including eating raw fish, does not count as killing. But in the past people all knew this saying, “You will pay for whatever you eat.” For ordinary people it is definitely like that. Whatever a person does, he will have to pay for it. Thus a killer will be killed in his next life or will go to hell. This isn't an issue for Dafa disciples, though. Today in particular, when Dafa is being spread among ordinary people, things like this have to be taken care of. In other words, Dafa disciples' cultivating toward Consummation is first and foremost, whereas the wrong they have done others and the grievances they caused in the past are compensated for by turning those things into factors that help them improve in the course of cultivating toward Consummation, and/or they are settled with blessings [to the creditors].

Put another way, the debts and grievances that are owed need to be returned with blessings and/or [the affected beings] have to be saved during the course of one's cultivation toward Consummation—for sure. Master did this when he arranged a cultivation path for every Dafa disciple; I have arranged [the paying off of] the grievances and the like. In the future, when you cultivate to Consummation and become a god, some of them will be sentient beings in your paradise. A sentient being in a god's paradise is of course a divine being too. He—a being from a low realm—will have gone to heaven in one step. When a being is going through cycles of reincarnation in the human realm, he is reincarnating in the midst of hardship no matter how great his life is, and no matter how blessed he is, his realm is not elevating. Instantly becoming a being in a high-level realm—well, everyone would want that! Didn't I tell you a cultivation story before? I said that there was a Buddhist monk who was preaching from the scriptures in a temple, and he saw two birds perched on the windowsill, unwilling to leave. So he said to them, “If you two want to listen to the Buddhist scriptures, reincarnate as human beings and then come and listen.” The two birds then suddenly took flight, hit a tree trunk outside the temple, and died. *(Teacher smiles)* Twenty years later, two young men came and wanted to become monks. *(Teacher smiles)* I am only making a point here. When a being knows he can go to a heavenly kingdom, nothing can compare to that, and he would rather die for it. When you are to get blessings that huge in exchange for your grievances, of course you'll be thrilled.

For you, as Dafa disciples, everything you owed in the past will be repaid and settled through the bestowal of blessings upon sentient beings. Now some people may think, “All right, then, I won't worry about what I do anymore. I'll even dare kill people.” No, you can't be like that! You are cultivating compassion, and doing good works for sentient beings is part of the cultivating you do as Dafa disciples. If you really were to kill people, commit arson, and do bad things, then you would not be a cultivator, and even less could you possibly reach Consummation; bestowing blessings upon sentient beings wouldn't apply in the least. Also, the tribulations in your cultivation are meant to pay for the debts of mental pain that you owe, so the increased hardship might render you unable to cultivate, and then you wouldn't be able to cultivate further. I was only referring to the things you owed before you took up cultivation, and to that which results from your needing to maintain a normal life as you go about cultivating.

So as for eating raw flesh foods, that's the worst. I remember that Yahweh told the people he created, “You should eat cooked food.” For human beings, meat has to be cooked before it can be eaten. Why is that? Cultivators in the past saw this, too: When a human being or an animal dies, the cells of his or its body have not died. And before those cells die, the spirit of each cell bears his or its image. Hasn't

today's science discovered that, too? After a small white mouse is sectioned, the image [of its tissue cells] displayed on the screen via optical fiber bears the small white mouse's image. That means the raw meat you eat is a large batch of live animals.

Cooked meat, on the other hand, does not have those spirits in it. But if it's raw, what is it like when you down them into your stomach? It's as if you have put living animals into your stomach. Since they are very tiny, you don't sense anything different for the time being, but over time it will lead to serious illness, it will cause reactions. Since the human body is special and its structure is like that of a universe, it's called a small universe. When the things you eat can't reincarnate out of there, they will stay in your stomach, and over time the resultant resentment and karma will make it a breeding ground for illness. A great deal of karma will be amassed. You will then have stomach problems, with the serious cases amounting to diseases of the stomach, gastric ulcers, stomach cancer ... anything is possible. In mainland China I saw people drink fresh snake blood. But each particle of each cell of that blood was a snake, so could swallowing all those snakes into your stomach possibly do you any good? (*Audience laughs*) A material thing can be absorbed and transformed via the human body's capacities, but its spirit will remain in your stomach, won't it? That's why you should make sure you don't eat any kind of raw meat. Nowadays some people are into eating raw fish. That's awful, too. That's definitely not some cultural cuisine. It's terrible. So you can't eat raw [flesh foods]—be sure not to. As cultivators all the more so can you absolutely not eat any kind of raw meat.

By contrast, as I've said, when things are well cooked they are dead, right? The spirits are gone and what is at the surface is only a material substance. Cultivators can cultivate and live here only when they can sustain their lives. Human beings have a way they are supposed to live, and insofar as they follow their normal ways of living very little karma is generated; and even more so is that true of cultivators. For cultivators, it's not a problem to get rid of this kind of [normal-living-induced] karma, and it's not necessary for them to repay it in their next life. If you achieve Consummation and godhood in this life, your Master will help you resolve it, and you will work it off during your cultivation as well. Thus, this accounts for some of the trouble and distress you experience in the difficult process of cultivating yourself. So don't push these things away. As I was saying just a bit ago, [some practitioners] can't take it when something negative is said about them, and they can't take any criticism. You should know that your karma is at play when those things come about.

Question: Is it necessary for the Taiwan cities of Taipei, Taichung, and Kaohsiung each to hold a New Year's Gala? Won't it affect clarifying the truth to mainland China?

Teacher: You can't let it interfere with clarifying the truth to mainland China. Here's how I look at it. It seems that Dafa disciples are all following the example of what is being done in North America, especially in New York City, because you all know that Master is in New York City. So you are thinking, "Let's do whatever they do there." That's not how it should be, though, because the situations are different, and each area should do things based on its own situation.

Nobody is persecuting Falun Gong in Taiwan, and the overwhelming majority of the people in Taiwan know about Falun Gong. So [if you are thinking about] how to clarify the truth to Taiwanese people and how to do away with the vile CCP's factors in Taiwanese people's minds, well, doing that doesn't fit the situation there, as Taiwan doesn't have that problem. Of course, nowadays some young people are not very clear about China's history, and whenever the vile CCP launches a "united front" they are fooled. In that case you should make the vile Party's wickedness known to the Taiwanese people. In short, you should discuss this among yourselves based on your own situation.

But Taiwanese students' helping to clarify the truth to mainland China and Hong Kong and to Chinese communities in other areas is very important. Teacher absolutely affirms the things you are doing. You

have put forth a great deal of effort to clarify the truth to mainland China in particular, and the effect has been excellent! I've said this to the Taiwanese students many times—they have done this really well. *(Applause)*

Question: Why is it that some Dafa disciples' families are unable to resolve their conflicts even when several people in the family are cultivators? Some of them have even fought terribly among one another (audience laughs), and as a result, the non-practitioner family members no longer support Dafa.

Teacher: Don't forget that it is human beings cultivating, not gods. Ordinary people make mistakes, and so do cultivators, only cultivators make fewer mistakes and fix the problems in themselves afterwards. When the kind of thing [you mentioned] happens, it is definitely because those students have not done well. You shouldn't get into a big fight even if it is to do something Dafa disciples are supposed to do. *(Audience laughs)*

While we are on this subject, I would like to mention something. Some of you have done poorly in clarifying the truth to your families, and that is because you haven't done it right. One reason is that you don't know what their stuck point is, you are unclear on the cause. Another thing is that when you clarify the truth to your family, you always regard them as family, rather than as sentient beings who are to be saved. You are a cultivator, and you are above ordinary people. You know that in this lifetime you are family, but did you know that in your previous life you might not have been? You know that in this lifetime this person is your wife, but who knows whose wife she will be in the next lifetime. In this lifetime that person is your child, but whose child was he in his previous life?

As cultivators, you should all be very clear on this, and you can't be mired in the kind of concept ordinary people have of being related to someone. Regard him as a sentient being and save him as you would any other sentient being. Then when you talk with him, the result will be different—guaranteed. Don't first think of him as family. When you instead talk to him as though he is someone to be saved, it will be different. In reality, the knowing side of his being is aware that, “You and I are family in this life, but in my next life I will be in someone else's family.” The core of his being knows this. When you truly have righteous thoughts as you save him, his true thoughts will be able to tell, and he won't be mired in ordinary people's feelings anymore.

Question: The overseas disciples who are on the wicked Party's blacklist have not been able to go back to China for several years now. Is it time for them to go back to China to see their families and validate the Fa?

Teacher: *(Teacher chuckles)* Don't go back yet. You are on its blacklist, so it will persecute you. And even if it doesn't persecute you, it will use all kinds of tactics to try to win you over. So do your best not to invite problems like that. Since you are validating the Fa here, this is where you are to cultivate. In fact, the factors that make you want to go back may be testing your human attachments, because only cultivation is your path. In mainland China we have the mainland China students to work on things there. Rest assured, they will do well for sure. I have confidence in that. *(Applause)*

Question: I know the importance of sending righteous thoughts, but sometimes I do it as if it were just a routine chore, and sometimes it's easy for my mind to start to wander. This has happened with other practitioners as well. How can we truly improve at sending righteous thoughts?

Teacher: Let me put it this way: Dafa disciples need to do three things well on their way to Consummation, right? And sending forth righteous thoughts is one of those things. If it's that important, why can't you do it well?! Why do you think of it as such a simple thing and not take it seriously? You do know how important it is. Besides, if you don't do one of the three things well, *then* what?

I have seen many students doing this when they start to send righteous thoughts. (*Teacher imitates a student falling asleep while sending righteous thoughts*) (*Teacher chuckles*) (*Audience laughs*) What those evil specter factors of the vile Party want is precisely to make you drowsy, and the drowsier you get, the more they reinforce that drowsiness. They just won't let you send righteous thoughts, because by doing so you are purging them. When you send forth righteous thoughts to destroy them, they interfere.

While cultivating, Dafa disciples' bodies in other dimensions are incredibly gigantic. The dimensions in the Three Realms have been divided among Dafa disciples into so many parts... Let me put it this way, and let me describe it on a larger scale: however many parts the future cosmos will have, that is how much Dafa disciples have to encompass. How could you not get rid of the bad and wicked elements, then, within the scope that you encompass, in the place that you are responsible for? You have to eliminate them. Some Dafa disciples don't take sending righteous thoughts seriously, and not only are they themselves interfered with: Those wicked factors are interfering with other Dafa disciples as well. Can't you do well at what you are supposed to do? Not only must you do your own part well, but you should help others, too.

Question: Some Dafa disciples in mainland China have been monitored by the Public Security Bureau for a long time. They are not mindful of safety or security and don't listen when other students caution them. Master, what should we do?

Teacher: It's true that some students are really careless when it comes to safety and security. It seems as though after they are released by the evil and have been severely persecuted, they forget about it a couple of days later. Your safety and security affects other Dafa disciples' safety and security, so you must be mindful of this and take this matter seriously. Don't let the old forces' factors take advantage of your gaps. Many students outside of China have seen Dafa disciples in China not pay enough attention to safety and security, but they can't say anything to them directly and can only worry anxiously. When you are not careful, you will be persecuted and bring harm to others.

Question: I'm a veteran student and I obtained the Fa in 1996, but today is the first time that I have seen you in person and I feel so blessed. There are so many veteran students in China who have never seen Master in person. They wish they were as lucky as the overseas students and hope that overseas students will treasure [the opportunity to see] Master. Is it true that those disciples who have had the chance to leave China should do their best to remain abroad?

Teacher: This is something that you should use your own judgment on. If you can do better abroad and want to join the overseas Dafa disciples in validating the Fa, I'm not opposed to that. If you will continue to be subject to persecution and be sought by the police when you go back, then you must stay abroad. If that's not the case and your situation [in China] is relatively freer, and there are a lot of sentient beings in China for you to save that you haven't saved, or you have a lot of regrets that you want another chance to address, then I think you should go and do all of that well. Master is just giving you a suggestion; it's up to you what to do specifically.

Question: Dafa disciples from the city of Zhengzhou in Henan province, Dafa disciples from England, and all Dafa disciples from the Anshan area of Liaoning province send their greetings to Master.

Teacher: Thank you all. (*Applause*)

Question: I have been practicing for a year now, but I don't understand why I have frequently had nightmares recently. Is it because I haven't done well? (Teacher: “[This is from] a Western student.”)

Teacher: I have talked about the state of a new student in many of my Fa teachings. When some new students suddenly go from being an ordinary person to a cultivator, they immediately face the problem

of [creditors] demanding that they pay their debts. Veteran students all know about this. Sometimes they had nightmares and ran into bizarre things. Those things are in fact all reflections of the fact that you are going beyond being an ordinary person and that your gratitude and grievances from the past need to be settled. Normally, ordinary people go through reincarnation and experience karmic retribution where they pay for what they accrued in their previous lives. [So the creditors think,] "I'm in no hurry to collect your debts, as you will have to pay me in your next life." But when you take up cultivation and are on your way to leaving the Three Realms, they think, "You haven't paid me what you owe, and if you leave I won't be able to find you later on, so you have to repay your debt to me." That is why it will seek you out ahead of time and you will encounter strange and bizarre things. But Master will protect you from all of that, so what happens will seem threatening but you will not be in any danger. No matter what, as a Dafa disciple, you should have strong righteous thoughts and handle these things as a cultivator would.

Question: When some students returned from the mountain they gave out to a Fa-study group inscriptions they had read from the stela there and written down, and they asked the students to read them repeatedly instead of reading Zhuan Falun at the group Fa study. Master, is it all right to do that?

Teacher: Of course not. I have talked about such things many times. I have said that the Fa that I teach at the mountain to a small group of people cannot just be passed on, as that would interfere with the overall situation of Dafa disciples' validating of the Fa. But since we always have people passing that on, I decided to stop teaching there altogether. So you haven't heard anything recently, right?

There have always been people who pass along gossipy information. Of course, I think they have done those things in a sneaky way, though, so I won't talk about it more here. Don't do that anymore. Dafa disciples need to have strong righteous thoughts and act like cultivators. Those people [who pass on things like that] have so many human attachments, and they constantly want to do or say something new just to be different, they constantly want to show off, and they constantly want to let people know how much special treatment they get from Master in person. There is no such thing as that, though. Each person has to cultivate himself. No matter how much Fa I teach you, if you don't cultivate yourself well, you still won't succeed in cultivation.

Question: When we were preparing for forum discussions on the Nine Commentaries, we came into contact with quite a few people who had escaped from Communist countries, including some from mainland China's Communist buddies. But these people have now established themselves outside of their native countries and are preoccupied with investment opportunities in their native countries, so they are unwilling to speak out and expose the vile Party's evilness. Master, what should we do about this?

Teacher: Don't make other countries a priority at this point. But, when it comes to clarifying the truth, all beings are equal and the same; we clarify the truth to all people. That is because the vile Party's factors are worldwide and not limited to Communist countries. And no matter who someone is, the attitude he has is his own business.

Question: Music and art come from enormous cosmic bodies, so what about sports? (Audience laughs)

Teacher: "Sports" is a general term that includes many things that are lumped together. And a lot of the things it includes are of different systems. So it's not absolute, as a lot of the things come from different systems. Why have things from different systems come? It is related to the Fa-rectification. No one knew what surface format the being who was going to reincarnate here on Earth would use to teach the Fa. Back then I didn't make a specific choice. Right before I was about to begin disseminating the Fa, and when all of these things were newly displayed before me, I chose to teach the cosmos's Law via Buddha Fa and a Buddha's image.

Question: A security agency outside of China gave us some names of CCP secret agents. Should we make those public to the students?

Teacher: Hold off for a while. Since they have come into contact with Dafa, I would like to give them a bit more of a chance. *(Applause)* I don't want to expose them until they are absolutely beyond salvation. I am very confident, as this Fa is so immense. So I just don't believe that I can't save you. *(Applause)* There have been so many students who did things in the past that they shouldn't have done, and so many students for whom doing those [spy] things used to be their job, and yet they have started to cultivate in Dafa. Isn't that the mighty power of Dafa? *(Applause)*

Question: Most of the time when I send forth righteous thoughts I can't enter a state of tranquility. Is it because I have been interfered with or because my cultivation level is low? I feel like many times the effect of my sending righteous thoughts is minimal.

Teacher: Let me put it this way. For a new student, if you don't feel much when you send righteous thoughts, the main reason is that your cultivation process has been short, and as a result you are not yet sensitive to the transformation of your entire body. Actually, many people who have cultivated for a long time aren't necessarily sensitive to that. Why is it that some people fall asleep as soon as they start sending righteous thoughts? It's because they can't feel their effect.

One thing I said earlier was that you are able to cultivate to such a high level precisely because you cultivate amidst illusion, such massive illusion. In this situation where the requirements for you are so high, when you manage to make it all the way through with strong righteous thoughts, that is remarkable, and you will achieve Consummation for sure. It's true that when many students send forth righteous thoughts they usually don't sense things very acutely or obviously. That's because the side that truly has an impact and this part that is not yet completely cultivated are separated. But this side that is not yet completely cultivated is the main body, and what's critical is whether the righteous thoughts of this most important part are strong! In cultivation, when your righteous thoughts are strong, you are improving and constantly undergoing transformation. When your righteous thoughts are strong, the righteous thoughts that you send forth are substantial, and the side of you that has been completely cultivated exercises its enormous abilities. Since the cultivated side is partitioned off, and your human side is being restrained, [your human side is] not very sensitive still. If the separation weren't there, then no matter how insensitive you were, when such a powerful force came forth, I think the side of you that's over here would quake incredibly, and the human body—this portion that has yet to be completely cultivated—couldn't withstand such a powerful force.

A lot of students don't place high importance on sending forth righteous thoughts, and a very big reason for this is that they are not sensitive [to what it is doing]. Whether you are sensitive or not, when Master tells you to do something you should do it, and it will for sure have its effect. It's definitely not just a formality! Master would absolutely not ask you to do something useless. *(Applause)* Were it just a formality, it would be meaningless for you, for me, for Fa-rectification and your validating the Fa, and for all beings. And moreover, [I have told you] to treat sending forth righteous thoughts as something highly important. You must take it seriously. Whether you can sense things or not, you need to do it with strong righteous thoughts. As time goes on I think all of you will come to sense things.

When you send righteous thoughts, you aren't required to enter a state of tranquility wherein you are not thinking about anything. You do think when you send forth righteous thoughts, and your thoughts are [supposed to be] very strong. Right now you should mainly think about disintegrating the vile CCP's evil specter and those dark minions and rotten ghosts, about destroying them, and purging them. That is different from going into a state of complete tranquility.

Question: I'm a ten-year-old girl, and I would like to know when a dance class for children will be

held. (Audience laughs)

Teacher: *(Teacher chuckles)* It's not that Master will hold it. *(Audience laughs)* Sometimes Master helps to coordinate things a little and things are then done faster, but they are all done by Dafa disciples. Right now our teaching resources are limited. When conditions allow we will hold such classes.

Question: Greetings, esteemed Master. I would like to ask about the many mainland Chinese fellow practitioners who have been unlawfully detained by the evil. Quite a few of them probably still haven't heard about the "Three Withdrawals." If, when the day for settling accounts with the CCP comes and some of the unlawfully detained disciples have not yet published their "Three Withdrawals" announcements, will this negatively affect them?

Teacher: As for Dafa disciples, when you are already a Dafa disciple, other things become less important. But in cultivation there are always those with strong ordinary human attachments, those with insufficient righteous thoughts, and new students. So if you are one of those practitioners, it really won't do if you don't state your stance. None of that is important, though, for diligent veteran students who have been cultivating for many years. That's how it works. The most important thing is to save all beings and to have ordinary people quit the vile CCP so that they don't go down with it.

Question: Master, I swore before your picture that I would stop failing the test of sexual desire, but later on I failed it again. I deeply regret it and I am afraid of losing everything.

Teacher: For a cultivator, a Dafa disciple, that is something truly dishonorable. In Buddhism they require people to adhere to precepts, and when someone breaks the precept on chastity it is really a very grave matter! Did you know that Dafa disciples have metamorphosed from the old cosmos and have emerged beyond the old Fa principles, but the old cosmos, the old Fa principles, the old beings... all of that is trying to hold you back!

I have talked before about the old forces' interference. Have you thought about the following? [Sexual desire] is one of the factors [they use] to hold you back! What do the old forces and the old cosmos see as the gravest thing? Lust, [in the form of] sexual activity outside of marriage. That's what they see as the most serious of things. In the past, once someone violated the precept on that, he would be thrown out of the temple, and his cultivation would be utterly finished. So how do gods look at this now? Do you know what they have said in the prophecies that they left behind? They prophesied that all of the Dafa disciples who would be left in the end would be those who had maintained their purity along these lines. In other words, these things are extremely serious to them. So the old forces and all of the gods in that cosmos will not defend anyone who violates the prohibition on this, anyone who doesn't do well in this regard; in fact they will push you downwards. They know [and think to themselves], "Li Hongzhi, you won't abandon your disciples, so we will make you abandon them." That's why they have the students who have made mistakes make more mistakes, over and over, and in the end do wicked things and go to the opposite side. "We will fill his head with crooked understandings and make him damage Dafa. Then we will see if you still keep him." And you know, that is what they have done. Do you think all those who have "enlightened" along an evil path really wanted to go toward evilness? There are reasons behind all of that.

So, you have to be careful with this, especially younger Dafa disciples. If you are not married, you must not engage in sexual activity, and even less should those who are married make the mistake of having extramarital relations. Dafa disciples can of course get married while cultivating in ordinary society. That's not a problem. But you must not make mistakes! You must not let the old forces' factors and the wicked beings take advantage of your gaps and persecute you to a point where eventually you can no longer cultivate. Then you will have lost your chance.

What Master says is absolutely true. Whether or not you are diligent, and no matter how you entered this Dafa, all of the arrangements made on the earth over thousands of years were done for what is happening today. You must really seize this opportunity and not let it pass you by. In fact, whatever the stance the multitude of beings on Earth have on Dafa, the bad things they are doing are all done in ignorance. If they truly knew that this is what they have been waiting for, they wouldn't do bad things that are detrimental to Dafa even if you beat them to death.

Of course, it might not be too easy for newer students to understand what I have said. Cultivate step by step, and in the future you will know. Because Dafa disciples have already cultivated for so long and have developed clear understandings on many things, it might not be too easy for newer students to understand [these things]. What human society glorifies is not necessarily all good, and what human beings glorify is not necessarily acceptable to gods.

Question: A lot of Dafa disciples in North America are trying to move to New York City and New Jersey, and some of those who work in other places also want to find a job in the Eastern U.S. so that they can be as close to Master as possible. (Audience laughs) This is understandable, but other areas need students there to validate Dafa, especially when the CCP's evil specter is still quite rampant in some areas.

Teacher: That is a problem. Some students have moved because they have certain special skills that happen to be needed, and that's fine. But other students shouldn't move rashly and without thinking it through or without a sound reason for doing so. Don't introduce difficulties into your day-to-day living or other aspects of your life. After you've caused those difficulties, every day you will be thinking, "How am I going to feed myself today? How can I ensure a roof over my head tomorrow?" In that case, you wouldn't be able to validate the Fa, right? That is, don't create uncalled for difficulties for yourself, disrupt your cultivation setting, or ruin the conditions that allow you to validate the Fa. It looks like in the future I too should live out West here for a while. *(Master laughs) (Audience laughs, applauds)* After this period of busyness is over maybe I will live somewhere else. *(Audience laughs, applauds)*

Question: Some of the older Dafa disciples around us have cultivated for many years, have an excellent state of mind and good health, and they look a lot younger than non-practitioners their age. However, they still show some signs of aging.

Teacher: This part on the surface that hasn't been completely changed in the process of cultivation has not gone beyond the constraints of time in this dimension. When this side of you has been cultivated to a point where it is no longer restrained by the time here and has become disassociated with this dimension's time, the time here will have no effect on you. This has happened to some students, but not everyone is like this. Each person's cultivation path is different, and the states arranged for them are different. For most practitioners, the side that has been well-cultivated can't be directed by the divine side, since they are separated.

Another reason is that the factors of the old forces that interfere are still exerting an effect. I have said something before: "The gods in the cosmos don't regard human beings as anything significant." People say that gods are compassionate. Yes, they are compassionate, and compassion is what they cultivate. But their having compassion does not mean they have compassion toward human beings; they have nothing to do with human beings. When a god comes into contact with human beings, humans may sense powerful compassion from him, but that's just the kind of god he is, and he is not being compassionate specifically towards you; rather, being compassionate is just his state. In fact, a lot of the gods of the old cosmos think, "You Dafa disciples are cultivating to such a high level, and you will determine the future of the cosmos. So I won't let you ascend if you fall short even just a little bit."

Even though we can't call these beings “ruthless,” when it comes to this they absolutely won't give a wrongdoer a way out, nor be lenient with you just because you have done some good things.

Back when I first started teaching the Fa, it was owing to these things that I reached an impasse with them, and things were delayed by a year. Later on I knew that if I kept holding off on teaching and spreading the Fa, a lot of students wouldn't have time to even obtain the Fa, and there wouldn't be enough time to save many beings. So, with many things I have been contending with them. Back at that time, I wanted the transformation of the surface body to be in sync with the part that has been well-cultivated; I wanted to have the body be disassociated with the human state during cultivation; and I wanted to have the cultivating disciples use their own righteous thoughts to maintain a state that is just like that of human beings. Over these issues I was at an impasse with them for a year. That's why I didn't start to teach the Fa in public at that time. We stayed in a stalemate for a year. Even now I can't acknowledge what they have insisted upon, and I absolutely will not acknowledge it in the future. In the future all beings that have been part of the interferences and disruptions will be disintegrated in the process of paying for what they have done. What I want has to be accomplished, even if we have to reverse history and start from scratch again. Both this content and process are necessary for Fa-rectification. I am not referring to things that will happen when the Fa rectifies the human world.

Question: Dafa disciples from Beijing and Zhangjiakou send their greetings to Master. Revered Master has said in past Fa teachings that it would be pretty good if we could save fifty percent of the people in China (not an exact quote). Does that number have anything to do with the two kinds of matter and their restraining effect in this human dimension, as discussed in the scripture “Buddha-Nature and Demon-Nature”?

Teacher: Buddha-nature and Demon-nature doesn't refer to this. It refers to the two kinds of matter—positive and negative—that exist in the elements that make up the universe. The lower the level, the greater the differences between the two kinds of matter; the positive matter becomes better, and the negative matter becomes more evil. When man was created, the two elements of good and evil already inhered in matter, so the created human beings themselves had both good and evil elements. When someone is irrationally shouting and screaming or venting, that's his demon-nature acting out—that is, his demon-nature side is at work. When a person is very benevolent, kind and genial, affable, and gentle, that is his good side coming into play.

When you cultivate an upright Fa and [are achieving] righteous Enlightenment, you are to restrain and eliminate your demon-nature. In the past, cultivation in Buddhism was about restraint—restraining demon-nature and enabling Buddha-nature to come into full play. In the end, when one's power of restraint had grown very strong, the person's demon-nature could no longer have any effect, as if it had been locked up. This Fa-rectification is to effect fundamental changes throughout the entire cosmos. That is why during Dafa disciples' cultivation things are being adjusted for them anew, starting from the microcosmic level, and whatever isn't needed is removed directly. It changes the state of a being at a fundamental level. It's different from how things were when people cultivated before.

Question: Political activity is a way of things in Western society [that bespeaks of] people having human rights and sovereignty, whereas “getting involved in politics” is a term that reflects the political culture after the CCP's distortion. Is this understanding correct?

Teacher: The CCP incites people to “care about politics” when it benefits from them doing so. A notable example is the Cultural Revolution, as you all know: Whenever someone was said to be “politically backwards,” it meant that the person had “backward thinking” and “didn't care about politics.” But when the vile Party feels threatened, participating in politics suddenly turns “illegal.” They say whatever suits them, and what they say is always supposed to be right.

Also, in Western countries the concept of politics is: any public activity that is not religious or that doesn't affect only the individual is considered a part of politics. That's why when it comes to Western society's take on whether Falun Gong is religious, their conclusion is: "Since the public activities you have aren't political activities, you are a religion... And you have spiritual beliefs." So they consider it a religion.

Let me mention something while we're on this topic. In the future, if someone asks whether we are a religion, don't offer an explanation, don't try to explain that anymore to the average person. Whatever the person thinks we are is up to him. You're clear on this, right? In China, with that kind of society, there is a clear notion of what counts as "a religion": A religion has a temple, worship, religious rituals that one needs to be part of, taking of vows, baptism, and so on—all of which quite clearly mark someone, or the activities he does, as religious. Without these it doesn't count as a religion. This is completely different from the concept they have in the West. So in Western society, if the average person comments on whether you are a religion, you needn't reply, and you don't need to take it that seriously. If a government, social organization, administrative department, congressional representative, etc. says that you're a religion, you no longer need to tell them that we're not. If legal issues are involved, you can handle things as a religion and go by the related legal provisions. So under these circumstances you can say it is a religion, especially when it involves legal matters. Are you all clear on this? It owes to conceptual differences in the East and West. This doesn't violate the Fa that I taught before. Early on I talked about this in *Essentials for Further Advancement*. I said: we are not a religion, but ordinary people will regard us as one. You really need to be clear on this.

Question: Master, we do the exercises and clarify the truth at tourist sites, and yet the banners we hang there are about the "CCP's despotic rule" and the "Nine Commentaries." Master, would you please tell us what effect this has in saving sentient beings?

Teacher: When the *Nine Commentaries* first came out, the ordinary people out there, including in mainland China, were tightly controlled by various evil factors and the vile CCP's evil specter. At that time, if [disseminating] the *Nine Commentaries* and clarifying the truth were done together, that would have made it very hard to save the people that were to be saved. But having gone through a year, and being at this point today, the situation is different: The vile CCP's evil specter has been destroyed to the point where it can no longer control the common ordinary person, people are now able to think about things independently, and people are no longer controlled by the vile Party's evil specter. In this situation, there's no problem with your doing it as you described.

Besides, the goal of our distributing the *Nine Commentaries* and advising people to withdraw from the Party is clear. You can explain it to people this way: The vile CCP has persecuted Dafa disciples for so many years, and during this time the vile CCP has been given chances; everyone is well aware of the fact that the vile CCP is persecuting Falun Gong. We have given it chances all these years, and yet it still hasn't stopped its persecution and it is still constantly persecuting Dafa disciples to the point of death. Then we have no choice but to expose the vile Party's persecution (*applause*), expose the vile CCP's evilness and its crimes persecuting the Chinese people in the past and persecuting Dafa disciples at present, and help people to recognize it for what it is and see why the vile Party is persecuting Falun Gong. Isn't disintegrating this vile Party the best way to stop the persecution of the Chinese people and Falun Gong? We have no interest in the vile Party's political power and we have no political ambitions; we just want to stop the persecution. For every day that the vile CCP does not stop its persecution of Falun Gong, that is another day we will keep up our efforts to expose its persecution and to disintegrate it. (*Roaring applause*) Actually, these things are very clear. Everyone knows that the vile CCP is persecuting Falun Gong, so why shouldn't we distribute the *Nine Commentaries* to expose it??

Question: Can we form youth orchestras in different areas? Toronto disciples send their greetings to

Master:

Teacher: Now you all know what a band's effect is, since it was discussed earlier. People in other areas know that a large marching band has been established in the New York area. This kind of marching band is also called a military band, as it originated in the military and later spread to civilians. But people still call it that. Come recent times, these bands are especially popular among students. People still call them military bands, or they call them marching bands. It was actually quite hard to put our band together. If all other areas were to do this, and if they didn't have the abilities or conditions that were needed, it would really affect the other work Dafa disciples do. The things that Dafa disciples do to validate the Fa absolutely must not be impacted.

Question: What should we do about the performance troupes from China [that are here overseas] on tour? If they don't use the title "The Same Song" but are nevertheless exporting the CCP's culture, should we handle them the same way? How should we handle these situations?

Teacher: There are a lot of performance groups sent out by China. You don't need to bother with them, since they have nothing to do with us. As long as they aren't targeting Falun Gong there is no need to bother with them. But if in those groups there are persons who have had a hand in persecuting Dafa disciples, then definitely don't let them off the hook.

Question: Dafa disciples from Germany, Tianjin, Dalian, Beijing, Huairou, Yingshan in Hubei province, Xishui, Luotian, Wuhan, Chaoyang, Haidian, Ningbo, Tangshan, Anhui, Chongqing, Gansu, and Changchun send their greetings to esteemed Master!

Teacher: Thank you all. *(Applause)* I know that there are Dafa disciples from Changchun here in the audience, too.

Question: Can new disciples who obtained the Fa not long ago be called Fa-rectification period disciples? Can they cultivate to Consummation at the same time as the veteran disciples?

Teacher: Among the new students there is definitely a group that belongs to the next batch—that of Fa-rectifying-the-human-world period Dafa disciples. Regardless of which period a disciple belongs to, obtaining the Fa and joining in was no easy thing. In the future, when the truth is grandly displayed and everyone comes to know what Falun Gong really is, it will be hard at that point for people to enter [Dafa cultivation], and it won't be as if whoever wants to enter can do so. *(Teacher chuckles)* It will be entirely different then from how today's Dafa disciples cultivate. So if someone can enter today, that's the best.

Question: A student believed that a certain coordinator's planning was poor and that it would not work out that well for us, so he tried to do things independently, and acted on his own understanding of how to validate the Fa. I think that the way he does things is good for validating the Fa, so I have decided to assist him in his efforts.

Teacher: Yes, things like this have happened, where the coordinator didn't think of certain things or the coordinator really didn't do well in certain respects. And some students have seen [what was lacking] and took the initiative to remedy it themselves—these things have happened a lot, too. But when the group wanted to do something, some students would disagree, wanting to do their own things, and then pull some people away to work with them. I want to tell all of you that you should work together with others regardless of whether the coordinator has done an adequate job on something, and together you should get it done better. You can't pull out and go off to do your own thing. Whoever does that is wrong. And as your master, I don't approve of that.

Question: A large Western company asked us whether they should stop supporting and investing in

China. How should we answer that question?

Teacher: I think that at present not many are able to pass up the monetary gains and stop investing in China, but of course it would be best if someone could in fact do that. Here is how I look at it, and I mentioned this in the last lecture: Investing in mainland China and helping the Chinese people become better off and live well isn't a problem. What I object to is continually sending large amounts of money there while Falun Gong is being persecuted, which gives the vile CCP the ability to persecute Falun Gong. At the peak of its malice, each year it poured a quarter of the country's Gross Domestic Product into persecuting Falun Gong—such a huge amount! Could it persecute Falun Gong without money? Absolutely not! Today's Chinese people don't believe in the vile CCP, and if they weren't paid by it they definitely wouldn't do anything for it. They also know that Dafa disciples are good people. Would those bad people do all those things if they weren't paid?

Question: Are you saying that we shouldn't point out other people's problems? Sometimes I can't tell if it is their problem or my own.

Teacher: I am not saying that you can't point out other people's problems. What I am saying is that the overall cultivation form of Dafa disciples has to be one where each person looks within! (*Applause*) The overall environment of Dafa disciples must not be one where people improve by criticizing and blaming each other! (*Applause*) So as your master, I can only encourage you to look within, and to, when problems arise, try to find your own shortcomings. If everyone could do this, that would be the best. When a person can't recognize an issue, of course it's not wrong for him to point it out. But when you point something out, it must be done with kind intentions. You are cultivating compassion, so you must have kind intentions. So you need to be mindful of both of these things and be able to do both. Then, I think, you will be able to resolve a lot of problems with ease.

Question: Some scholars in the West have said bad things about Dafa and are very set in their opinions. Is this important? How can we better help them eliminate their bad notions?

Teacher: If a Westerner says that Dafa or Dafa disciples are bad, then I think he must have listened to the CCP's propaganda. When he doesn't know what Dafa disciples are like, how could he say they're bad? He must have listened to the evil's slanderous propaganda, then. So you should explain things to him. In fact, haven't you been clarifying the truth during these years?

Beginning in 1999, when the persecution began on July 20, all of the CCP's media, newspapers and radio alike, from the national level to the provincial level and then the county level, in the vast land of China, all of the television stations, media, and newspapers—more than a thousand television stations and hundreds of newspapers—were all engaged in an overwhelming campaign to attack, suppress, and persecute Falun Gong. Media outlets from all the countries in the world were using information from mainland China to report on Falun Gong. They were all helping it persecute Falun Gong, and the entire earth was enveloped by darkness. People in many areas didn't know what Falun Gong was really about and were listening to the vile CCP's propaganda. Over the years, haven't you overturned all of that by clarifying the truth? Today Dafa disciples have caused the world's people to look at them in a whole new light, and isn't that how you accomplished it?

That is, you should get the facts across and demolish the vile CCP's base, slanderous propaganda, and this you have achieved. But there are still some people who are unaware of the facts, just like the issue raised in this student's question, which still exists. So you should continue to work on this, all the way until everyone knows what the low-life, vile CCP really is. Of course, some people are beyond help, and no matter what you do they are beyond help. I know that, and that's why I said that it would be pretty good if you could save half of the people in China. The same goes for other areas—is it possible to save all people? I can tell you that it's not possible. You can have that wish and do it with

compassion for all beings, but you can't stop working on it or slack off just because there are those who are impossible to save. That would definitely be unacceptable.

Question: Someone at my workplace has close ties with the Chinese Consulate and has been deeply poisoned by the wicked Communist Party. Do people like this still have any hope of being saved?

Teacher: Just clarify the truth to him and present the facts. If he really can't be saved, then he can't be saved.

Question: A mainland student became pregnant with a second child. Should she give birth to the baby? Does it make any difference if a person has a compulsory abortion instead of having the baby, in terms of the karma that is created?

Teacher: The circumstances in mainland China are unique. That's why I have basically covered everything in the Fa-principles that I have taught, and I don't want to talk about these specific scenarios in a setting like this; the impact would be too large. But I can say that the vile CCP's practice of coerced abortions is despised by the whole world. For you, as students of cultivation, in theory there is nothing wrong with protecting life, of course. That's all I can say here. Specific circumstances may need to be looked at on a case-by-case basis.

Question: Why isn't there life in granite?

Teacher: Why are there people asking about such things? (*Teacher chuckles*) “Not having life” would only refer to the surface form of the granite that is visible to the human eye. The ever more microscopic matter that comprises granite is entirely different. What is truth at this level may not be true at a different level. Seen in terms of a high-level Fa, a low-level Fa may even be the opposite of it and wrong. There is a continuous elevation of truths. You need to be clear on that.

Question: There is a person who is actively helping with Dafa work, but who can't comprehend where a person goes after reaching Consummation. He does acknowledge Master, but doesn't study the Fa often. Where have I fallen short in terms of removing the roadblocks in his mind? He is here today. (Teacher chuckles) (Audience laughs)

Teacher: In the case of many ordinary people, you can't expect too much of them. You are a Dafa disciple, so of course you are anxious to see him obtain the Fa. Of course, it is the best thing for a being to become a Dafa disciple, and that is your wish. But given the situation today, you can't fault someone for not understanding things to some extent. Also, a sentient being who can help Dafa disciples do things during this time is quite remarkable to begin with, and he will definitely have a good future, for sure. That's because this period is different from any other, for it is a time when Dafa disciples are going through great suffering.

Question: If a person believes whatever Master says and doesn't think about it further, is that a correct state to be in?

Teacher: Gods will definitely think that person is extraordinary. But I would still like the person to read the books, and to study the Fa a lot. Normally when I am teaching the Fa, you might sense that the field of compassion is very large and powerful, and that it can resolve many problems. But in daily life I can't be like that, and I won't use that power. And I have—I prepared—an ordinary-person-like faculty of thought, and that is what I use in daily life. So I might make jokes or say mundane type things in those circumstances, and you might wonder, “How come Master is not on the Fa?” (*Teacher laughs*) (*Audience laughs, applauds*) There are many nuisances here in this human place!

Question: Can we have a business sponsor a certain page of the Dajiyuan newspaper? We would control the content, and I'm mainly referring to a secondary page.

Teacher: If a business is going to sponsor an entire page, then what it would like published needs to be specified in the contract.

Question: When someone wishes to make more money or get promoted at an ordinary job, he can get what he wants by doing a better job. In a media outlet or company run by Dafa disciples, can a person likewise get the position or money he wants through hard work?

Teacher: In society when you do your job well, you will naturally get promoted. And when your boss is happy he might compensate you better. But the media outlets run by Dafa disciples are not making sufficient profits, and they have to get to where the major media outlets in society are in this regard. Since it can't be done, aren't thoughts like those futile? As to how to gain a desired position, if someone thinks too much about this sort of thing, something is probably off, and it seems to be more than just a normal attachment. Dafa disciples have been doing things as volunteers. I don't think I have heard of any problems like someone wanting a certain position. *(Teacher laughs) (Audience laughs)* Wanting a position is not something Dafa disciples should have in mind, right? And mulling over how to get it is even more problematic, right? Dafa disciples have been running media outlets for the purpose of validating the Fa, clarifying the truth, and saving sentient beings, and they have been doing it without asking for or expecting anything, and without compensation. Nobody thinks much about positions, right? Of course, if the media outlets really could be very well run and manage to pay salaries and even give out some bonuses or other benefits, then I would be happy for you. The premise is that we first have the means to do so.

Question: Having interacted more with Western practitioners and Taiwanese practitioners, I really feel that the mainland China students who grew up in the wicked Party's culture have been corrupted quite a bit. From our habits of thought to what we say and how we carry ourselves, there is so much that we should search deep within over.

Teacher: When people first come from mainland China to the West, they criticize the West, saying this or that's bad or how this and that don't look right. Why is that? It's actually because they have grown used to all of the vile CCP's things. Only after some time do they realize that those things of the vile Party are bad and sinister. It's the result of their having been inculcated with the Party culture over a long period of time. But the way of life outside of the vile Party is the natural way of life for a human being—nobody tries to inculcate you with anything. This is why when those who have lived a long time overseas return to mainland China, they find how people talk in the mainland pretty amusing. They find that each of their sentences is full of stiff Party dogma. It's the result of the wicked Party's culture having deeply saturated people's lives, permeating every detail of their thinking, even, and it has made people's behavior, demeanor, speech, and even facial expressions and the looks in their eyes tainted by the vile Party's culture. *(Audience laughs)* Of course, these things aren't key. As long as Dafa disciples' righteous thoughts are strong and they know what is right and wrong, those habits can be gradually removed. These things aren't major.

Question: In the period of personal cultivation, when I would go through a test of sickness karma I knew it was to eliminate my karma and that through my endurance and steadfastness in the Fa I could pass the test, and in the end Master would remove the karma. But in the period of Fa-rectification cultivation, if the old forces, its dark minions, rotten demons, and the vile Party's evil specter persecute my physical body, and it likewise manifests as sickness karma, then because we shouldn't acknowledge the old forces' persecution and shouldn't just endure it, can I eliminate the evil factors behind it by being steadfast in the Fa and sending righteous thoughts to negate the persecution?

Teacher: When you have strong righteous thoughts, nothing can impede you. From the day that a Dafa disciple takes up cultivation his whole life is rearranged. In other words, this life of yours is now the

life of a cultivator. Nothing is by chance anymore, and nothing will happen just by chance. Everything on your life's journey is directly related to your improvement and cultivation. After the arrangements are made, nobody can change them. To change them would be to violate Heaven's laws. Only Master can change them. But the old forces—in order to destroy all of these things—and beings of the old cosmos who have been affected by the Fa-rectification, have taken part in it in the name of assisting with the Fa-rectification, and that is what brought about huge partitions. Even though my Law Bodies can change things, the cultivation paths of Dafa disciples have been arranged in great detail, and if a small change is made for a Dafa disciple, things will have to be completely redone. While the immense force of the Fa-rectification advances, this huge undertaking unfolds as Dafa disciples are simultaneously changing individually. Moreover, 99% of the entire cosmos has gone through the Fa-rectification, and the Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples are already walking the last leg of their journey. So you can't redo from the beginning the part that has already gone through Fa-rectification in order to make changes for just one being. That is why when many Dafa disciples do poorly in their cultivation, when certain problems that involve them come about, or when things appear to get very serious as they go through tests, at those times if you want Master to directly take care of things for you, Master would have to redo from the beginning everything in the new and old cosmoses that relates to you. All of the things that have gone through Fa-rectification in these years would have to be changed, time would have to be turned back... everything would have to be re-done from scratch. That's how huge the issues are. That explains why I am telling you I really can't change things [in that scenario]. Whatever level you cultivate to will be your level, and if in the end it appears that you can rise no further, that situation also bespeaks of interference from old-force factors. Actually, when it seems that somebody cannot pass a test, that owes to a variety of factors. When we really do have someone who leaves early, as long as he was a Dafa disciple who was doing all of the three things, he will definitely achieve Consummation. It's only that his level will be different.

Also, if I were to personally do things for you, the evil would seize upon that fact, and the new cosmos would even be contaminated. Fa-rectification is utterly solemn. When you first took up cultivation Master at that time did for you everything that should have been done. Now it's up to you to battle through tests with righteous thoughts. Master can help you when your righteous thoughts are sufficient. But when your righteous thoughts are lacking and you can't meet the standard, if Master were to do something, things as major as I just described would be involved. Thus, once the cultivation path of a Dafa disciple has been arranged, basically nobody can just rashly change it, and no one—good or bad—can do anything to you. Even when someone wants to give you something special and good, he isn't able to add it in. And if someone wants to give you something special that was not part of what you originally had in your cultivation, or if someone wants to go overboard persecuting you, they won't be able to. Exceptions only come about when you, yourself, do poorly. Do you understand what I have said? (*Applause*)

Many students saw before that when I did healings for ordinary people, I didn't need to lift a finger. I would just take a look at the person and he was cured. When I looked at him I was emitting certain things; I could emit supernormal powers from any part of my body. His ailment would be cured immediately over there upon my emitting those things. Human beings are, after all, human, so sometimes the person would wonder, "How could I be cured if you didn't even lift a finger?" For this reason I would often use my hands. Most of the time the illness was cured instantly, regardless of what it was. I can heal any illness an ordinary person may have; I can cure them all. But Dafa disciples are a different story. Of course, you shouldn't bring an ordinary person here now that I've said that, for I will not do healings. It hasn't been easy for Dafa disciples to come to where they are today in their cultivation, so I don't want any extra trouble to come along and interfere. Since healing an ordinary person involves his whole life and entails balancing the karmic relationships he has in various

dimensions—only then can he be healed—all those debts of his have to be resolved benevolently, and beings who want to collect their debts have to receive some good things. Only then can the ailment be taken care of. At this time Master doesn't want to do such things. That's why I basically don't do anything [along those lines] for people, and that's to prevent bringing additional troubles to Dafa disciples in their cultivation process. If something weren't handled well trouble would immediately ensue, and those added troubles would amount to interference. That's basically the situation.

Question: When some Dafa disciples were severely persecuted by malevolent people or evil spirits from other dimensions, they went to the hospital and used ordinary means to deal with it, or received injections or took medicine to alleviate their suffering. Does that cause a lot of harm to a cultivator's body? Can they still cultivate? Before someone has become free from the evil's persecution of his body, can he use ordinary means?

Teacher: What's important for cultivators is righteous thoughts. When you have strong righteous thoughts, you are able to withstand anything and do anything. That's because you are a cultivator: someone who is on a divine path and who is not controlled by the factors of ordinary people or low-level principles. (*Applause*)

I told you early on that I removed the name of every single Dafa disciple from Hell's list. Every ordinary person is listed in that registry. I have removed the names of Dafa disciples from Hell's registry. I had their names removed from Hell. So your names are not there. In other words, you are not in any way beings of the Three Realms, and you are no longer ordinary persons. That is why when your righteous thoughts are strong you can resolve any problem. The sickness karma that appears in your body manifests as a test. Of course it appears to be sickness karma, as it definitely won't have the appearance of a god getting ill. So you should handle it with righteous thoughts. You are a cultivator, so it is definitely not in fact sickness. But it won't come across that simple. Do you know what the old forces think? They think, “Goodness, you, their master, have explained the Fa on sickness karma so explicitly.” Yes, it's true that back then when I was faced with students having a tough time passing tests of sickness karma I did explain these things in very clear terms, and the students present here today know that. But no matter how clearly Fa principles are spelled out, it won't make cultivation any less difficult, and [the requirements] might even become stricter. For example, one manifestation is that it's not good enough if someone merely comes to realize something: He must be righteous in both thought and action. If the righteous thoughts of somebody are not strong during his cultivation, he won't be able to pass his tests well and they will drag on. Also, when he's not able to achieve strong righteous thoughts, his confidence will be weakened. Haven't some people lost confidence and even arrived at crooked “realizations” as a result? Sometimes you only think about wanting Master to spell out the Fa even more explicitly, but that is no substitute for cultivation if a student still lacks steadfast faith in the Fa principles. Of course, on the other hand, Dafa disciples who have strong righteous thoughts and whose faith becomes only more steadfast after they grasp Fa principles will make it through any trial.

Conversely, when someone who is a new student or who himself realizes that he hasn't been diligent enough gets sick and goes to the hospital, then so be it—[I guess] we'll just count it as part of his cultivation process. After he cultivates better later on, he will gradually realize what he should do. Cultivation does involve a process, and we should give people chances after all. Of course, there is no need to talk here about those who are diligent. For those who aren't certain in their minds: If you go [to the hospital] Master can't say anything. If a person has taken every step well in cultivation, he will be admired by all. Gods will admire him, and Master will hold him in high esteem. If a disciple takes giant strides without pause straight to Consummation (*everyone laughs*), and never falls even once (*everyone laughs*), then I'll tell you, he might well be a god. (*Everyone laughs*) Or, perhaps Master didn't arrange

things well for him, and his trials have been too small, as he can pass them all. So, usually the ordained trials can be passed as long as the person improves himself; if you don't improve yourself, you can't pass them. That's basically how it is. If someone makes a mistake, it can only be considered a state during the cultivation process, and it can't be said that the person is no longer good enough, nor can it be said that he will always be in that state. That is merely one state in the process. If someone really doesn't have strong enough righteous thoughts at times and really can't endure something anymore, what should he do? Then go ahead. *(Everyone laughs)* Yes *(Teacher chuckles)*, go to the hospital then.

That's how it is in principle. But how could a divine being have ordinary people administer treatment on him? And how could ordinary people heal a divine being's sickness? *(Applause)* *(Teacher laughs)* These are Fa principles. But often the case is that you really don't come across as having all that strong of righteous thoughts. When you can't handle yourself well, then go ahead. If your mind is unsteady, that means you are not meeting the standard to begin with, and prolonging the process won't lead to any changes. And if someone holds out for the purpose of saving face, that is adding attachments on top of attachments. In such cases there are only two choices: You either go to the hospital and thus give up on trying to overcome the test, or you completely let go of everything, behave like an upstanding and noble Dafa disciple who has no resentment or attachments, and leave it to Master to arrange whether you stay or go. When you are able to do that, you are a god.

Question: The truth-clarifying activities in Manhattan have ended, and students from different places are returning to where they came from to validate the Fa. Should those of us Dafa disciples who came from mainland China return there, if appropriate in our own circumstance, to clarify the truth there?

Teacher: If you left China because you were persecuted there, you absolutely should not go back. Now that you have come out of there, you're out. Stay and clarify the truth here, then. If you think that if you go back there your circumstances will be fairly relaxed, then that's different. In that case you can go back, it's not a problem. If it would be dangerous for you to go back, then don't go back.

Question: Since the purpose of the New Years Gala is to save sentient beings, we should give the tickets away for free and shouldn't talk about making money, or we should set the ticket prices low. Is that thinking correct?

Teacher: No, it's not correct. Dafa disciples are Fa-rectification period Dafa disciples. Back when you bought Dafa books, I almost wanted to give them to you for free. But that was for Fa-rectification period cultivators. For ordinary people, getting things for nothing wouldn't conform to this dimension's principles. As Dafa disciples you can, however, give them things for nothing, as that is done out of a Dafa disciple's compassion.

But have you thought about how hard it has been for the media outlets run by Dafa disciples? Those of you who aren't involved have no sense for how limited their funds are for keeping up the operations of the media outlets—the TV station, the newspaper, etc. Everyone has sought to make a breakthrough with the advertising and get into a positive cycle. That's my wish as well, and it is the wish of all students who help run the media, and they have been working toward that. Wouldn't it be a good thing if they could turn a profit with the NTDTV Gala? The people involved in the Christmas show at Radio City Music Hall themselves said, “Our show isn't as good as yours. Our programs can't match yours.” But their ticket prices are very high. They put on ninety shows in one month, and make enough money to cover all of their expenses for the whole year, including salaries. Then why can't NTDTV do the same?

As for ticket prices, well, in light of the quality of the New Years Gala and the amount of effort that Dafa disciples put in, the ticket prices really aren't high, in fact. That holds for anywhere in the U.S., as the standard of living in the U.S. is not all that different from one region to another. The real issue is

name recognition. Some students wanted to purchase some tickets and give them away, thinking, “If the ticket prices weren't high and a little cheaper, I'd buy more and give them away as a gift. I can't afford to buy them when they're too expensive, nor can I afford to give them away.” This might be an issue, and that's why some students have been complaining. Of course, then again, there are different ticket prices, and there are cheaper tickets, since there are different seating options. But that said, based on our experiences from the last time or two around, it would be okay to adjust the ticket prices next time. Or we could have a special show exclusively for Dafa disciples.

Question: We are planning on filming a mini-series for television about Dafa disciples validating the Fa, and the storyline involves scenes in mainland China. What should we do?

Teacher: It's actually easy to resolve challenges with background scenery. You know, film compositing is a simple technique. If you need scenes of certain places, just ask someone to film some location footage there and bring it back.

Question: There are many homosexuals in San Francisco, and many ordinary people there support that kind of behavior. The evil has taken out of context certain words that mentioned homosexuals from Master's scriptures so as to attack Dafa. Master, please tell us whether we should reply to that openly and on a large scale, or clarify the facts to the individuals whose minds have been poisoned.

Teacher: Just clarify the facts to the individuals, and that will be good enough. You don't need to respond to it. You know, I keep one thing under control very well: When it comes to things that are to be resolved when the Fa rectifies the human world, I absolutely don't do anything about them now. Whether it be carried out by the old forces or the evil, rotten demons, any attempt to stir up things that are not part of the current affair will be futile. They might cause a bit of a ruckus, but we don't need to pay much attention to them. I know what I'm doing. If someone has something to say, I can think about the issue he raises. But the things I want to do will absolutely not be disrupted. This is true both with my Fa-validation today, and with the Fa-rectification in the entire cosmos. I am willing to listen to anybody's suggestions, but I will still do things based on what I want to do, and no one can change that. *(Applause)* Likewise, you should know what *you* are doing, and once you have decided on the correct choices, you shouldn't be disrupted by anyone or anything. You shouldn't allow any of the things that happen as Dafa disciples cultivate, clarify the truth, save sentient beings, and work against the persecution to interfere with what's first and foremost for you. You must handle this well! When some event takes place in society, even if it's something that is helpful for Dafa disciples' efforts to resist the persecution, Dafa disciples absolutely cannot stop cultivating and just go work on that thing! Cultivation is cultivation.

Question: There are a lot of ennobling stories about how high-minded emperors and individuals in ancient times responded to criticism with gratitude and no resentment. I really feel that I haven't cultivated myself solidly enough when it comes to accepting criticism. Sometimes I can't communicate well with others because I am focused on defending myself.

Teacher: Speaking of defending oneself *(Teacher chuckles)*, that reminds me of something. Someone said to me—and I have indeed observed it—someone said to me that there is a difference between how students from mainland China and students from Taiwan deal with problems. If a Taiwanese student hasn't done something well, he will listen to you if you point that out to him, and he won't be defensive. But when a student from mainland China hasn't done something well and others point it out to him, he will immediately say, “You don't know what happened. The situation at that time was such and such.” *(Teacher chuckles)* *(Audience laughs, applauds)* He knows that it's not good for a cultivator to directly rebut what is said. So he tries to shirk responsibility in a roundabout way, to defend himself in a roundabout way. When you've made a mistake, you've made a mistake. Be straightforward. If you have

done something wrong, you have done something wrong. Only those who dare to admit their mistakes are viewed in a positive light by others and admired by others. Even gods admire them. (*Applause*) [Imagine this,] if you reach the very end of this journey and gods ask you, “Were you always able to handle it correctly when others criticized you before? Show us,” you will have nothing to show. (*Audience laughs*) And if you say, “I never did anything wrong, and no one ever criticized me,” will anyone believe you?

How could a human being not make mistakes? It is human beings cultivating, so how could they not make mistakes? And yet no one has seen you admit to your mistakes. (*Audience laughs*) Aren't you giving away the fact that something is wrong with you? Don't you have a flaw in your cultivation? From now on I will be watching to see who can admit to their mistakes. (*Audience laughs, applauds*). Who is capable of never making mistakes, anyway? And what do mistakes count for? We just need to correct them, don't we? The crux of the matter is your attachments. Aren't you supposed to cultivate away your human attachments? If you always try to be evasive, keep things from being hit on, and are unwilling to get rid of them, *that* is a big problem.

Question: Master, could you please talk about the importance and uniqueness of clarifying the truth in San Francisco's Chinatown?

Teacher: You know, that street in Chinatown, almost all the shops along the entire street, are businesses from mainland China, their owners are from mainland China. Even if you do things very well in the Bay Area overall, and although the Chinese community is scattered and the vile CCP has no audience, still, those who live in different areas often go to Chinatown, so that place cannot be neglected. Don't leave the vile CCP any footholds. (*Applause*) No matter where it is, eliminate it. You simply cannot let that vile demon harm people here.

Question: When we clarify the truth to people, we come across many ordinary people who know that Dafa is good and are kind to Dafa disciples, but are unwilling to withdraw from the Party. Will these people have a future? What can be done?

Teacher: Whatever a person wants to do is up to him. Dafa disciples must do what they should do, and not leave any regrets for themselves.

Question: Our local branch of The Epoch Times is having fairly significant financial problems. Given this situation, could we resolve the financial problems by taking up a collection from the disciples who are participating in the media work?

Teacher: I have never done anything like that. Because I know that I absolutely forbade collecting funds when I first taught the Fa, later on, even when the situation was really tough, I always disapproved of collecting funds from Dafa disciples. The fact is, every Dafa disciple has been using his or her income to validate Dafa. That is outstanding. And that is not from having taken up a collection; rather, it is done from the heart. That is mighty virtue. If we were to use the methods that religions use, I have always felt it would be damaging to Dafa. And that is why I have never done that myself, and I have not permitted you to do it. We haven't collected money from people. Instead, you have taken the initiative to do things. The former is passive, while the latter is from the heart. Dafa disciples have been validating the Fa, and the mighty virtue is their own. If I were to take up a collection to do things, the mighty virtue wouldn't belong to Dafa disciples but to me. So try your best not to do that. If you really have hardships, you may want to bring it up with a small number of students who have the financial resources.

Question: When you said half of the people would be saved, were you saying half of the Chinese people, or half of the world's population?

Teacher: Nothing has been concluded yet. I was saying that if you could save half of the Chinese people, as your master I would be very happy for you and pleased for the sentient beings. You can't see what today's Chinese people have become. If you could, you would be startled! You can't see how bad things have gotten in China. If the true environment were displayed before people's eyes, it would be terrifying. The vile Party is turning the Chinese people into soulless fiends. People's conduct has become very base and degenerate, and has sunk below the lowest line at which a human being can be. And on top of that is the persecution of Falun Gong.

Question: I'd like to send greetings to esteemed Master on behalf of the Dafa disciples in Thailand, Dafa disciples in Pusan, Germany, Shenyang city, Chaoyang city in Liaoning province, Changsha city, and Dafa disciples in Hunan province who are being unlawfully detained and imprisoned send their greetings to benevolent and magnificent Master!

Teacher: Thank you! (*Applause*) And a Dafa disciple in mainland China sends greetings to me. I won't read his name out aloud here, as we need to protect Dafa disciples.

Question: When we work with fellow practitioners in Japan on Internet development, we always come across students who have gone off course at one point. We have different opinions over this, but there are only a small number of students who are knowledgeable about the technology. Master, please tell us whether we can work with students in that situation.

Teacher: If they went off course at one point and made mistakes, as long as they have found their way back, that's good. What's worrisome is those who are still obstinately sticking to the wrong course. If someone has found his way back and has not done any bad things since being with Dafa disciples, you can make the decision based on the specific situation. Don't ask Master to decide these things.

Question: Can we frequently invite ordinary people to participate in our radio commentary programs, as long as they are not against Dafa and are against the evil Party?

Teacher: That should be all right, I don't think there is a problem with that. For the commentary programs that should be fine.

Question: My wife has been involved in a technical project. She has put a lot of time and energy into it. But she thinks that the coordinator hasn't treated her fairly, and she is unwilling to cooperate with the students in the large project team. As a result, the technology she has developed hasn't been utilized in Fa-rectification projects. I am concerned that she is going off course. Master, please offer your merciful guidance on this.

Teacher: It's actually a matter of not letting go of attachments and being unable to take it anymore when the test becomes large. In fact, can you see [the problem here]? You have already left the state in which a Dafa disciple cultivates and are about to leave the arena in which you are to validate the Fa.

Sometimes when others hit on an attachment of yours that you don't want them to touch, it really is hard for you. Some people just don't want to listen to other people's comments. And some are displeased when their ideas are not used. These are all human attachments, very stubborn human attachments. Whenever you bring something up, does it have to be adopted? Some people say, "I've said it over and over again with so much patience, but it still didn't make any difference." Is the actual, objective situation as simple as you think? A lot of things have to be coordinated with the big picture in mind. Also, it is possible that those whom you work with really haven't cultivated as well as you have. But if someone hasn't cultivated as well as you have, does that make him not a Dafa disciple? And should you not cooperate, then? And also, every person is going to have his own thoughts on a matter. It's possible that no matter how good an idea is, it won't be used. Are you going to stop working on the project, then? Those who are in charge of projects have to consider how the suggestion connects with

things overall, and how different things are related to one another. This is a key difference in the thinking of those in charge and that of the others.

Some practitioners think only about their technical skills being the best, and opt to go their own ways when their ideas are turned down. In fact, they are being antagonistic. You shouldn't do things that way. The person in charge surely has his own ideas. You are Dafa disciples, so you should make a point of working with each other better. Even when your idea is not used, no matter how good the idea is, [you should think,] “Whatever idea you think is good I'll work with, and I will help do things, and do them well. And I will try my best to do a good job with what I'm supposed to do, because I am cultivating.” It's not as if only when your technology is adopted will you improve in cultivation. Working well with and cooperating with others, and working together to do a good job with the tasks at hand, *that* is how a cultivator should be, and *that* is first and foremost.

I think this is all I am going to say today. I have gone through all of the question slips. (*Enthusiastic applause*) Of course, I know that some question slips may have been screened out by the conference staff. It's true that I can't answer all those questions, owing to time limitations. So at every Fa conference they screen out questions that have been asked before or that wouldn't have much bearing on the Fa conference as a whole. In any case, a cultivator must look at things as a cultivator should and with the mind of a cultivator, and absolutely cannot look at things with the mind of an ordinary person. Nothing you encounter is simple, accidental, or an ordinary thing. It must have to do with your cultivation and your improvement. Because you are a cultivator, your life path has been changed, and you have been given a new cultivation path; nothing on your path happens by chance. But it will definitely appear to be by chance, because only in this delusion and in a state where you are the same as ordinary people can you show whether you are cultivating, whether you cultivate well, and whether you are able to pass test after test. *That* is cultivation, and *that* is righteous enlightenment!

For the time being, this is how Dafa disciples of the Fa-rectification period should be. Things will be different in the future. This is not how future Dafa disciples will cultivate. The requirements for Dafa disciples of this period are high, and they have huge responsibilities—their historic missions are so great (*applause*)—so how they cultivate in this state of illusion becomes very important. That is why when you can't feel anything or can't see what is really happening in your cultivation, you can't become sluggish. You have to watch out for this. In the setting in which you cultivate you will come to know and realize many things indirectly. I think that, plus the Fa principles of Dafa, should be enough to strengthen your righteous thoughts.

In terms of the Fa principles that Master has taught, many of those in the audience today have read at some time Buddhist and Daoist texts, some were once lay Buddhists, and others even cultivated in certain places before. So you can look and see—has anyone ever explained Fa principles to this extent? Has anything ever been so far-reaching or clear? This is something that has never ever happened before. If I had just gone and made things up, I don't think this could have ever happened, the things that you have observed would never have happened, and the vile Party's evil specter wouldn't have been so afraid. From the perspective of ordinary human knowledge, what I, Li Hongzhi, have disclosed has gone far beyond the knowledge of modern people and the scope of today's knowledge. I have even solved the mysteries that baffle many fields of learning. These are not things you can find in books or learn in society. You have come to know through your cultivation that this is the Buddha Law, this is the Great Law of the Cosmos, and this is the Fa that has truly disclosed the Truth of the Cosmos. I could reveal many, many things that would be even more intriguing to mankind, but that will be done in the next stage. The origin of mankind, specific details of things, all the mysteries that have come about in different historical periods, all kinds of events that have happened in the world in different periods, different historical figures, and certain inexplicable phenomena that people don't believe in,

including heavenly beings, and on and on, will all be displayed in living color in the future human society. At that time, I will use a different approach to guide the future Dafa disciples and give them, in a different manner, a way in which to cultivate. The way things are now is how it is today.

Dafa disciples, all the way until their last step to Consummation, will be tested as to whether they can make it. There could be very, very critical tests for you all the way until you are just one step away from finishing. That is because every step becomes more and more critical to your cultivation and your tests, especially toward the end. You know, those lawless gods of the old cosmos will try to maneuver things until the very end, as long as they are still around. When you are not up to par, they will surely try to find a way to bring you down. They know that Li Hongzhi won't abandon you, so they will use all kinds of methods to make you fall. Having just one single thought be off will make a person falter. So the closer it is to the end, the more serious and crucial the tests will be.

The Dafa disciples who have been persecuted for a long time but have remained steadfast and continued to validate the Fa have worked very hard, and it hasn't been easy for them to obtain what they have obtained. Even less should they become lax. Don't allow yourselves to leave the state in which you are to cultivate because of momentary fogginess, or because you have let up over time. Once the predestined opportunity is lost, that will be the end of everything. The evil has been trying everything possible to bring you down. Some gods don't want you to rise through cultivation. Don't think, "They want what's good for us and want us to rise through cultivation." That is not true! They are trying everything possible to bring you down and not let you rise. You need to keep that in mind, and that's how it is in reality. Gods in different realms have the thoughts specific to different realms. In the Fa-rectification they cannot see the ultimate truth of the cosmos, and some of them just don't think the Fa-rectification and Dafa disciples are deserving. Only those who know the truth can see the seriousness of this and dare not do things wantonly. If this Fa-rectification of the entire cosmos were to fail, the cosmos would forever cease to exist, everything would disintegrate, the origins of matter would all disintegrate, and if you wanted to form something out of a cosmic body that had nothing in it, the length of time that process would take would be simply terrifying. And moreover, it couldn't be formed if the right opportunity or conditions were not in place.

Dafa disciples all know that the things I talk about are getting higher and higher and bigger and bigger, and are laying out, more and more, certain things that are happening in the Fa-rectification. For new students or students who haven't been diligent, this might make it more likely that in terms of comprehending things there's a disconnect, and more likely that you will not understand things. There is no way around it, though. I have to teach the Fa in the context of the overall situation of the Fa-rectification, and that is why I have to talk about things this way. I hope that everyone who has obtained this Fa will cherish it and won't lose this opportunity. In the past, when I first began to teach the Fa, I said, "If I can't save you, no one can." The truth is, not only would no one be able to save you, but also you will never again have an opportunity like this. That's because, this time around, mankind has reached this point, the very end. After this Fa-rectification and the Fa's rectification of the human world conclude, the next cycle of mankind will be a new mankind then, and the people who will be able to go over will undergo changes—even their outward appearance will change.

Okay, that's all I will say. I hope everyone will do better and better at the end. Be sure not to become lax. You must not slack off, and you must not become apathetic. The other thing is what I said earlier about a necessary component that Dafa disciples are lacking, something they have missed, and that is your inability to take criticism from each other. You cannot refuse to accept other people's constructive comments and even negative comments. You cannot continue to push these things away. From now on all of you have to begin getting rid of this attachment. This isn't something that I am asking you to improve on one step at a time, as I usually do with things when I teach the Fa. Rather, this is a very

crucial, final, major problem that must be removed *now*. That's all I will say. (*Long, enthusiastic applause*)

The students sitting in the back have heard everything, right? (*Applause*) It doesn't matter that the students in the back are far away, as my countless Law Bodies are behind them. (*Teacher laughs*) (*Disciples applaud warmly*)

Li Hongzhi

February 25, 2006

Pass the Deadly Test

Some people haven't made Fa study a priority, and while the evil persecution of Dafa disciples and intense pressure from the ruthless red terror have taken place, their omissions have been exploited by the evil because of their fears, and they have done bad things to Dafa and Dafa disciples that they should not have done. They have served as secret agents and moles for the vile Party's intelligence agencies such as the CCP's Ministry of State Security, Headquarters of the General Staff [of the army], Ministry of Public Security, etc. When some of them have given in to the evil, they have done things, in varying amounts and of differing degrees, that are utterly disgraceful for cultivators to do. Being lives themselves, they all know deep down that Dafa is good, so after they do those things they regret it. They want to return to cultivation, but they now have something that the CCP secret agents can use against them, so they are filled with remorse. They fear that, if they return, the secret agents will use those things against them to threaten them. And they are even more afraid that once Dafa disciples learn about what they have done, they will be too ashamed to face those Dafa disciples. It's quite a dilemma for them.

The truth is, losing this opportunity of the ages and not fulfilling the real purpose of coming to this world are more terrifying than the attachment of being too ashamed to face others. Cultivation is cultivation, and cultivation is about getting rid of one's attachments, putting a stop to bad human behavior and all kinds of fears, including the human attachments of being afraid of this and being afraid of that. You went down a wrong path because of your attachments and fears to begin with, and now, when you want to come back, you are again being held back by fear and letting it block your return.

Fear can cause one to make mistakes, and fear can cause one to lose a predestined opportunity. Fear is a death trap on a human being's journey toward divinity. You have made huge mistakes because of it already, and yet now that you want to correct them you are afraid of people finding out about them. Cultivation is a serious matter. If you keep harboring fears like this, when are you going to stop being held back by fear? To those students in particular who have been covering up all of these things and have seemingly acted better than most other students, if you don't let go of this attachment, stop your sinful behavior, and get rid of your fears, then no matter how many Dafa disciples' things you do, you are doing them to cover things up. If you let go of these sins that you have been carrying around and suppressing inside and you make your way back, then everything you do will be clean and part of a Dafa disciple's cultivation.

As your Master, I have never kept account of the wrong things you have done in your cultivation; I remember only the good things you have done and your accomplishments. Dafa disciples have made it through during cultivation and unparalleled evil persecution, so they are deeply aware of the hardships in cultivation, and they won't fail to understand the students who have gone down the wrong path. So I am telling you one more time here: All students who have made these kinds of mistakes [spying], starting now it's best that you publicly state that you are getting rid of that filthy burden and returning to Dafa. Only when you openly reveal everything that you have done wrong will you be able to break free from the secret agents' entanglement and threats. And only when you openly reveal those things will you be able to remove your attachments and fears. Dafa disciples and I will not regard students who have gone down the wrong path in their cultivation the way ordinary people would. Back when I began teaching the Fa in human society, I knew about the various states that would emerge in people's cultivation. During a human being's journey toward divinity, since it is a human being—and not a god—cultivating, he will definitely make mistakes in the process of cultivating, and there will definitely be tests that he doesn't pass well. And of course there are those who make huge mistakes.

Once you have recognized your problem, the key question is whether you are determined to get rid of it. Only when you are determined to emerge from it can it be called cultivation, and that is cultivation.

I hope that the students who have gone down the wrong path won't keep making mistakes. This may be the last time Master teaches the Fa to students like these. Seize your opportunity. Countless gods are watching you, and Dafa disciples and I are looking forward to your return.

Li Hongzhi

May 9, 2006

The Ukraine Fa Conference

Greetings to the Dafa disciples attending the Ukraine Fa conference!

First, I'd like to wish you a successful conference. The Consummation of Fa-rectification Period Dafa Disciples is Dafa creating the Great Enlightened Beings of the new cosmos, so this makes your responsibilities that much greater. As you progress in cultivation, your mission of saving beings and dissolving the evil and the old factors' interference will naturally converge with your cultivation. Only when you cultivate yourself well can you establish everything of the future. So I hope your conference is a grand occasion that is truly able to inspire Fa study and improvement.

Be diligent, Dafa disciples! Although in your cultivation it is painful to get rid of your human attachments, this path is a sacred one.

Once again, I wish your Fa conference success!

Li Hongzhi May 26, 2006

Teaching the Fa in Canada, 2006

You have all worked hard. (*Disciples applaud enthusiastically and reply in unison: "Greetings, Master! Master has worked hard!"*)

These large-scale Fa conferences are grand events for Dafa disciples outside of Mainland China. Many new students and students from far away participate in each large-scale Fa conference, so aside from holding other activities at each Fa conference, the conference should truly have a real impact on and help to elevate your cultivation. That way, the trip will be worthwhile for those of you who are new students and those who journey from afar. So Dafa disciples' Fa conferences are not mere formalities that have to be carried out each year, but rather, they are held for the sake of true, lived cultivation. They are also a setting I have given you, the only setting in which Dafa disciples can gather and learn from each other via discussion on a large scale. So you must see to it that the goal is truly met, and make them truly conducive to your improvement in cultivation. Only then is a conference meaningful.

You know, by now Dafa disciples are very clear on this approach to cultivation [that we have] today. I think that those in the audience here are for the most part able to meet the requirements as to how a Dafa disciple cultivates. The form of cultivation in Dafa is one in which cultivation is done among ordinary people, and it established for the first time ever a form in which people cultivate in ordinary society. This approach was established on day one when I began to impart the Fa. Never had [something like] this come about before, from antiquity up through the present.

When I teach the Fa, I have to start from the things at a lower level and work my way up. I start from the basics, which makes it understandable for a larger number of people. That's why at the beginning I didn't teach things at a high level. The whole creation of the Three Realms was, in fact, for the purpose of Dafa's dissemination today. There was no Three Realms in the cosmos of the past, and mankind did not exist. Mankind was created by gods. That's an absolute truth. Why have extraterrestrial lives come to the earth so frequently? They have had many reasons. And those aside, they are in awe of the human body, in which they have seen so many things they had never seen before. The reason is, in the cosmos of the past, this environment—that is, these dimensions where the Three Realms now exist—was inhabited by a variety of lowly creatures, including what we refer to today as aliens. They are in fact lowly creatures that have gained a certain technological expertise. [But then] suddenly this cosmic body went through enormous changes, and human beings came into being as the world was created; a being such as man came into existence. Those [alien] creatures think, looking from that technological standpoint of theirs, that the composition of the human body, the entire design and functioning of the human body, is just so perfect. Of course, why is that the case? Because it was created by gods. Compared to those simple creatures, those lowly beings who at one time inhabited this dimension, the human body is something entirely different.

Man was created by gods, so he has the appearance of a god and even an internal structure like that of gods; it's only that he lacks the capacity to do things as gods do. Also, this dimension renders lives unable to see the true picture of things, and has the creatures in this dimension in an environment that was specifically prescribed and specially made; it is a place made up of a multitude of gods who ensure human beings' existence. This environment renders the human beings in this dimension able to see only objects in this dimension, and not objects beyond this dimension or even objects that exist in this dimension in a special manner—though there are a small number of people with a good underlying base who can see or come into contact with such things. This has bolstered most people's belief that man is the only life form in the universe, and they even think that the conditions for life's existence

here are the only ones required for the existence of life for any living thing in the whole universe. As a result, mankind has sealed itself off still further. So no matter how mankind goes about researching things or trying to understand them, it cannot see the true picture of the universe. This state of being is in fact normal, for it is a limitation set by gods. Man was supposed to live at this level and in a realm such as this. In other words, people will never arrive at the true picture of the universe if they use merely human means to explore it, however they may try. That too is something set forth by gods.

So what was the purpose of all this? It was to keep human beings in that state—a steady state—before Dafa was imparted, and to maintain it all the way up to the day Dafa was to be taught. That's why all events that have taken place in the history of the world, during the course of different historical periods, and dating back to the creation of the Three Realms and mankind—including the early state of affairs after man first appeared, and all the way up through what took place over the last few thousand years after the standard culture of man came about, for example, all of the famous persons and major events in history—they were meant in fact to establish a culture, ways of thinking, and human concepts and values so that people would be able to recognize the Fa and the true culture of cultivation the day that Dafa was taught. Had all of this not been established in history, the Dafa disciples who are sitting here today would be in a primitive state, one similar to how human beings were just after gods created them, and they wouldn't be able to understand anything. If that were the case, it would be impossible to teach the Fa, and it would be impossible for people to understand the Fa. "What is cultivation?"—they would have no idea. Put in the simplest terms, it would be analogous to today's people having no culture. How, then, would this Fa be taught today? There would be no way. So all of those things, from ancient times up to today, took place for the sole purpose of establishing the culture needed for Dafa's dissemination.

I have been doing this in two steps. The first one involves Fa-rectification, and the Dafa disciples who have made it through via Fa-rectification cultivation are Fa-Rectification Period Dafa Disciples. There will be more in the future, that is, cultivators of the period in which the Fa rectifies the human world, the next step. At that point the entire cosmos, with the exception of mankind, will have gone through Fa-rectification. I have often talked about the interference to Fa-rectification from the old cosmos's elements, the old forces, and the many varieties of bad beings from high levels. At that time none of those things will exist, except for that which is at a low level and that will be left for the purpose of helping the cultivators of the future to improve. What will the Fa's rectification of the human world be like when there is no interference from high-level old factors? Think about it, with no resistance from those high-level, old-force elements with power, and given that human beings are very weak to begin with, and that the beings in the universe's lower dimensions and the beings in the dimensions of the Three Realms don't have any major abilities, at the time of the Fa's rectification of the human world the situation will be different, for sure. Right now people are wondering: What will happen when the wicked Party is gone? What will things be like then? What will China's future government be like? There is no need to think or do anything about that. Of course, as you validate the Fa and clarify the truth, you can infer things with your current understanding. There is no problem with doing that, since it's okay to infer things based on the normal logic and understanding a person has. But as far as what will really happen, that's not up to human beings, and it won't resemble how people now imagine it. At that time human society will have changed completely, the state of things will have changed entirely, and society's structure will have altogether changed.

So during this period, especially since this is the period where Dafa disciples are validating the Fa while Fa-rectification is taking place, the requirements for this group of cultivators are especially high. Since these cultivators are here while Fa-rectification is taking place, they shoulder a lot and their responsibilities are great. No matter how many Law Bodies Master has or how enormous his power is in the cosmos, his main body is [after all] amidst layers of partitioning of the old cosmos, and is

directing everything in Fa-rectification from this world. Mankind and the Three Realms were created for the needs of Fa-rectification in the first place, and Master's main body is here, so the focal point of the evil's interference to Fa-rectification is likewise here. Dafa disciples are validating the Fa, safeguarding the Fa, and at the same time cultivating themselves here, so their responsibilities are of course enormous; and they also need to save the sentient beings here, and this responsibility is likewise momentous for Dafa disciples. That makes the Dafa disciples of the Fa-rectification period all the more extraordinary.

As I have said, although in history there were cultivation forms of different sorts, those were merely establishing a culture. What is cultivation? Only what [you have here] today is true cultivation of human beings. (*Applause*) Only this format today is recognized by all gods in the cosmos as true cultivation. (*Applause*) All of those things in the past were establishing a culture. No human being who has entered the Three Realms has ever made it out. No being who came to this human world from the larger universe has managed to return to the heavens—it has never happened. Despite all the talk about cultivation that has taken place, nobody has ever succeeded at it. And though they talked much about ascending to the heavens, nobody ever made it up there. You know about the subordinate soul. There have been subordinate souls that ascended to the heavens after using the human body as a vehicle for cultivation. After using a human being as a vehicle, the subordinate soul would assume a human image, and that is why some people have seen this or that person ascend to the heavens via some past cultivation method. They might say that the person was seen ascending to the heavens upon his death, but the one who ascended to the heavens was not the person's main soul, nor truly that person. So none of the beings that have come to the Three Realms have ever made it back. Those who did were all subordinate souls, and what became of the main body was never something the subordinate soul deemed important. Human beings have never been deemed important by any gods.

I have said before that gods, too, were created and established in different time periods. The gods who were able to get close to this place were unclear about the true picture of the cosmos, and even the Three Realms' history and the reasons for its existence. And in particular, those gods who are able to interact with human beings are of a low level, and they weren't at all clear on these things. They didn't even know why human beings existed, and that is why human beings were not important to them at all. Back when I was teaching the Dafa, many gods said, "You are teaching Dafa even when human beings have degenerated this far, and you are even teaching them such a great Fa." How could they know the real significance of man's existence? Of course, they now realize it and they all know. As Fa-rectification progresses step by step and the truth is unceasingly displayed, some gods who played a negative role have come to realize their mistakes and gradually seen the truth, and have thus become clear. But the most fundamental issue, which is the fact that the old forces are to be entirely denied on a fundamental level, is something they still can't ultimately and fully accept. They still can't see this truth. When things arrive at the final step and they see the truth, it will be too late, and will spell disaster for them.

Since this is to be done in two stages, even though human society is quite indifferent upon seeing Dafa disciples being persecuted, and the way things are in human society suggests that there isn't any major impact upon ordinary society—all the professions are running like clockwork after all, and this machinery that is human society is still carrying on and operating normally—that is because things related to human beings aren't to be done until the time when the Fa rectifies the human world. Right now I basically haven't done anything about human beings, and as you save the world's people you are doing nothing more than awakening and encouraging people's consciences and innate goodness. While persecuting Dafa disciples, the evil, so that it could have a way to justify its persecution of Dafa disciples, has wanted all of the world's people to oppose Dafa disciples and Dafa and to not leave a foothold for Dafa disciples in the world. So it fed a slew of lies to human society and has used all of

China's propaganda tools to cause an uproar, trying in vain to make the whole world believe its lies and join in with persecuting Dafa disciples. That being the case, a lot of sentient beings that didn't know the truth, many of the world's people, were poisoned. So what this says is, the goal of Dafa disciples' clarifying the truth during this period is to save people and eliminate the poisoning of people by those old elements and by the vile party's evil specters. The reason is, the old forces are to be weeded out during Fa-rectification, the vile party and the evil specters will likewise be weeded out for sure, and all who have a hand in what they do will be weeded out. This is a law laid down in Fa-rectification, and it has to be done this way. If we don't go and save someone like that, he or she will be weeded out by history along with the evil.

When a life is truly weeded out it is horrific. The type of death visible to people isn't horrific, because that is not the death of the person's true being. When a human dies, he is only taking off a shell that is made up of [things in] the most surface material dimension, just like taking off an article of clothing; whereas the real life has reentered the cycle of reincarnation. Of course, some cultivators in the past who cultivated well had a subordinate soul of theirs picked up and led away at the end of their lives, but that wasn't the person himself. This is something that happens after a person dies. Only the cultivation established by Dafa can truly bring a person success. For all of history no one has known why man came here and man's place in the world. And exactly because these are mysteries, no god has known the answers—a situation which has effectively ensured the stability of mankind, the stability of the Three Realms, and the safety of human beings.

These mysteries are now being gradually revealed, and gods and beings in the heavens are gradually coming to realize and know the truth as well. Answers to questions such as, "Why has Dafa been taught? Why has such an enormous Fa been taught to mankind? Why are human beings so fortunate?" [are becoming clear to them.] Those gods often used to say to me, "Only human beings are important to you." They were implying, "We're not important to you. In Fa-rectification you are so strict with us, and yet so lenient with human beings." Now they no longer say that. No one says that anymore. In other words, the Three Realms, the human world, and mankind—all of these things affect the entire cosmos, and are connected with the salvation of the boundless, countless beings in the entire cosmos. Among them are boundless, countless high-level beings, and extremely high-level beings. Isn't this a momentous thing? But a human being who has long been in a state of delusion can't see the true picture of things from within the Three Realms. Given that human beings can't see what is true, in the Three Realms a state had to be provided for them with which they could maintain a human way of life. And being in a state of delusion, human beings are sure to get ensnared in that state, with the result that they harm one another for the sake of survival and vie and fight over things. Regardless of whether what they do appears calm or intense, it's all for the sake of personal gain and out of selfish motives. But in any case, since this state was arranged for human beings, as long as they act within the set boundaries of that state it won't be counted as their being at fault. With humans having been in this setting and this state of delusion for a long time, since the time Dafa started spreading, the question has become whether people can see the Fa for what it is and whether they can break out of the shell in which they have so long been sealed. For human beings this has become a question of utmost importance. It might seem unfair to human beings, but it is in fact fair.

So when human beings have come here and are among other human beings, whoever here, in this setting, goes beyond the set boundaries of this state and during the course of his life keeps doing serious harm to others and bad things, that person is spoiling this environment and spoiling this state that human beings are to have, and he is sinning against this momentous affair itself. So while Dafa is being disseminated and during the course of Dafa disciples' cultivation, when it comes to whether people can obtain the Fa and whether they can cultivate to the end, the amount of karma they accrued in history definitely causes varying degrees of challenges for them as human beings or as cultivators.

Put frankly, when it comes to the questions of whether someone can obtain the Fa and whether someone can cultivate all the way, there will be different forms of interference for different people. Those troubles all stem from the person's own past actions, so no one should complain. Who can obtain the Fa? Who can break out of the shell? And who can truly, rationally see this Fa for what it is? Viewed in this light, things are indeed fair for sentient beings.

For human beings, the attitude they hold toward something as significant as this is of utmost importance. So this state of delusion has an effect on human beings: When it comes to whether you can cultivate, whether you can see the Truth, whether you can see the true picture of things, and whether you can encounter this Fa, the fact that the lives are in a state of delusion indeed makes things terribly hard for them. That's why the Dafa disciples we have sitting here today don't include the entire human race. Of course, as I have said, the spreading of Dafa has been fair to all beings. One's social status or position does not matter—only one's heart and one's attitude toward Dafa matter. In fact, the entire Fa-rectification has been done in this most lenient, most merciful manner. The mistakes that beings made in history are not counted against them. No matter how large of a crime you committed or mistake you made in history, none of it is held against you: Only your attitude towards Fa-rectification today and your understanding of Dafa matter. That's the only thing that counts. If you can't accept even Dafa, then you have lost your chance. If you say, "I don't acknowledge Dafa," well, if you don't acknowledge Dafa you are not acknowledging the future, for the future is made by this Fa.

Most all of the entire cosmos has been completed in Fa-rectification. I described it as a balancing scale before. Between the old and new cosmos, the new cosmos was ever gaining in weight, and the part that had gone through Fa-rectification was ever increasing, and that side was pushing down as if on a balancing scale. Now that's no longer a question, as the formation of the new cosmos is basically fully done. (*Warm applause*) What remains are the final elements. And when all of those things are resolved, the last stage of Fa-rectification will draw to a close. After Fa-rectification ends, the era of the new cosmos will begin. And in the end only the human world will be left to do. The expanse of this Earth and mankind's Three Realms will be surrounded and sealed off, and be separated from the new and greater cosmos. Haven't today's scientists discovered that the Milky Way is growing further and further away from the universe, and separating from it at a rapid pace? It's actually a process of departure. After Fa-rectification in the new cosmos is done, the effect that all lives in the Three Realms would have upon the new cosmos would be polluting, and that's why the Three Realms needs to be separated, sealed off, and dealt with in isolation, and that is the [stage of] Fa's rectification of the human world.

Dafa disciples are cultivating in this period, and the responsibilities they shoulder are that numerous and weighty. Now you have heard this clearly and realized it—so that is the purpose of man's existence and the cultivation state that Dafa disciples have. You should thus be clearer than ever about the format of cultivating in this world, for only *this* is cultivation, and only *this* is truly the cultivation arranged for the lives within the Three Realms. Everything that appeared in the past was for the purpose of establishing a culture for mankind, whereas *this* is the final starting point by which human beings are to truly re-ascend, and that is why the requirements for the cultivators who are doing this cultivation are different. The three things that Master has taught you in the Fa to do well seem simple, but [things such as] whether you are diligent and the Attainment Status you will achieve are linked to it. Dafa has been established in human society, and your form of cultivation has you conform to ordinary society to the maximum extent. Many people think it's about being lenient with and making things convenient for our cultivation, but diligent students don't see it that way. It is, rather, the path that Dafa disciples must take as they cultivate. So everything that you do, be it your balancing well your family relationships while you live among ordinary people, balancing well your relationships in society, how you perform at your workplace, how you conduct yourself in society, etc., none of these are things you can just go through the motions on. All of these are part of your cultivation format, and are serious matters.

Many students understand only that doing the exercises and studying the Fa are cultivation. Yes, with those you directly engage the Fa. But as you go about truly cultivating yourself in your day-to-day life, the society that you come into contact with is your cultivation environment. The work and family environments that you spend time in are both settings in which you are to cultivate yourselves, are part of the path you must walk, are what you must handle, and handle correctly at that. None of these should be glossed over. When you have made it to the end, [a question would be]: How did you travel the path that Master arranged for you? When all is said and done, these things have to be taken into account. And in the course of your cultivation these things have to be looked at, too. So you shouldn't neglect anything. As far as convenience goes, [in Dafa] a person can cultivate without having to enter a monastery, go to a secluded mountain, or leave the secular world. But from another perspective, all of this adds a layer of difficulty: If you are to make it through, you have to do well with things such as all of the above, and do well in every aspect of your life.

Having said that, different people understand the Fa at different levels, and there are newer students. Some people might figure, "When I take care of domestic things I'm cultivating. It's good enough if I build closer relationships with my parents and siblings." Then you have developed a new attachment and gone to an extreme. You do have to do everything well, but you can't go overboard; when you go overboard it's another attachment. Also, you need to have the right attitude toward Dafa and truly regard yourself as a cultivator. How you try to be diligent, how you regard the Fa, and how you cultivate—including the length and priority of your Fa study—you can't neglect any of these things, and they are actually more important, for this is your path, the path that you are to take. You are precisely to cultivate out of ordinary human society, and you are precisely to exist alongside the Fa-rectification while it is under way and be responsible to sentient beings. That is why you are to cultivate this way.

I've said before that if you were all to go off to secluded mountains or monasteries to cultivate, you wouldn't have a lot of contact with society, and you wouldn't be able to effectively save beings as widely, right? So wasn't there a reason you were advised to do things as you are now? Doing it this way provides you with circumstances better suited for saving beings, doesn't it? Of course, as you go about cultivating, you—who are cultivators—are sure to meet with tests, for you need to elevate. When someone doesn't handle things well, troubles will constantly arise. But those who do handle things well will constantly meet with tests as they cultivate. If you categorically regard all of them as interference and try to resolve the troubles just for the sake of resolving them, then you won't be able to resolve them, because they come about for the sake of your improvement. You should view them with righteous thoughts, [asking yourselves,] "With this trouble I'm facing, what's the correct approach to all that has to do with this interference, and how should I balance it against the goal of saving sentient beings? And how should I go about it in a way that's responsible to sentient beings, and view the occurrence of these things as good grounds for clarifying the truth, or as good opportunities to clarify the truth?" Under normal circumstances you might not have a reason to go approach people and clarify the truth to them, and if you do so out of the blue they might not want to meet with you. Doesn't the interference give you a chance to interact with people? Shouldn't you seize the opportunity and clarify the truth to them? The greatest responsibility Dafa disciples have, aside from cultivating themselves, is that of saving lives. So could you not do that? And how could you not do it well? So don't regard the occurrence of whatever problems you face as interference to your rightful tasks, to your Fa study, or to your clarifying the truth. That's not the case. When a problem arises, it provides an opportunity for clarifying the truth.

Haven't I said that when you look at things in the Three Realms, things are reversed? Many of the things that mankind considers bad are good. And many things that mankind considers good are bad. Isn't the conventional wisdom in the human world inverted? Human beings think it's a bad thing to

experience hardships. But suffering hardships can reduce an ordinary person's karma and sins. When a person endures a lot of hardship during his lifetime, he will receive blessings in his next life. When someone has money or enjoys a high rank in the next life, it owes to his having done good deeds and accumulated blessings and virtue in his previous life. If a person keeps doing bad things, doesn't have even a bit of blessings or virtue left, and has accumulated much karma, then in his next life he will not only have no blessings or virtue, nor enjoy any good fortune, but he will also have to pay for all that karma. So he will be poverty-stricken his whole life and looked down upon by others. He may even think that the world is unfair to him in all sorts of ways, when in reality it's all because he is paying back the debts he accrued in his previous life. This is speaking in terms of human beings. For cultivators, then, doesn't this environment provide exactly opportunities to improve oneself? Dafa disciples all know that enduring hardship eliminates karma, and that it furthermore furnishes opportunities to improve oneself. They are able to view it correctly, and along with paying off their karma they are able to seize the opportunity and do a good job with the things they should do. Even though it's hard, those are tests that they must overcome. When you are able to think correctly on the matter, keep the difficulty in the right perspective, and make it through the right way, you will have overcome that test, your level will have been raised, your realm will have elevated, and your *gong* will have risen, right? Isn't this how the entire process of Fa-rectification cultivation works?

Remember, what is for human beings conventional wisdom is inverted. So when you encounter troublesome things as you cultivate, don't regard them all as problems, as interference to your rightful tasks, or as attacks against those tasks, or think, "This thing I'm doing is of utmost importance, that thing I'm doing is of utmost importance..." Many things might not truly be how you see them, in fact. Your true improvement will always be first and foremost, and the consummation of your cultivation is always first and foremost. But you can't think, "Since you've said my cultivation and improvement are the most important, nobody should interfere with it." You'd again be wrong. Doesn't interference provide opportunities to improve oneself? From my perspective, being your master, I think your improvement is the most important, but that doesn't mean that as you improve a smooth path is in store for you. Say you went up to the heavens with a lot of karma and were hauling along a huge load of baggage (*audience laughs*), how could that be permitted? I have to set up certain tests for you and have you let go of those attachments of yours, have you get rid of all that baggage. As you go through one test after another, you are to continually shed your attachments and human thinking, and you won't be able to carry those things into the various tests [and still pass them]. So when a test arrives, you say, "That's trouble," and some people even go everywhere looking for Master and ask, "Oh my, how am I going to resolve it?" Well, how could I resolve it for you? If I were to resolve it, you couldn't pass that test. If we took away the test, are you supposed to go forward while hauling a load of baggage with you? So I can't take away that test for you. (*Master chuckles*) Does that make sense? That's why I say that when it comes to cultivation, you must truly grasp what cultivation is, be truly and rationally responsible to your own cultivation, truly handle everything you encounter with righteous thoughts, and have strong righteous thoughts.

At the last West Coast Fa conference, didn't I talk about how a lot of Dafa practitioners aren't able to take criticism? They refuse to be criticized. As soon as others say something they explode, get upset, or start a confrontation with someone. They want to hear only pleasant things. So you just want to walk a smooth path, don't you? You want to ascend to the heavens with your big load of baggage? Isn't that in essence what you want to do? You have to let go of all bad, human thoughts and every type of attachment you have. Isn't not wanting to hear criticism an attachment? You want to hear only pleasant things, but how could that be? [Arrangements are made] exactly to have others say unpleasant things and see if you are moved. A god wouldn't pay any heed to what a human being said about him—you can't affect him. He wouldn't in the least try to figure out how what you do relates to him. He pays no

attention at all, because you cannot affect him. Gods can control the human mind and lead humans to do certain things, not vice versa. How could human beings possibly affect gods? So if you wish to become a divine being, don't you yourself have to be that way? Don't you have to let go of those attachments? And don't you have to let go of those feelings of yours that can be stirred up by human beings?

The same applies even when the trouble is caused by a fellow Dafa disciple. You might say, "This isn't trouble created by ordinary people, so it's hard to overcome." That's for certain. The Dafa disciples who are cultivating are not gods, but human beings too. And when it is human beings cultivating, all kinds of human attachments surface. So in this cultivation environment of Dafa disciples, it can only be said that beings are continually moving upward; the environment can't be made as pure as that of gods. But this environment is much better than that of ordinary people. That's the only way it can be, and it will become ever better. That is why in this environment of Dafa disciples, all kinds of human attachments have played out, and even very bad conduct has occurred. Haven't you seen all of this on the journey you have traveled? It's to be expected.

Yes, many people are very worried when Dafa is negatively affected, and think, "How could this fellow cultivator have acted so poorly?" Yes, if everyone thinks that way, you will be able to safeguard this environment and constantly improve its purity. But problems will still occur, and human attachments will still play out. I've been watching the overall state of things, and I knew that these things would be sure to unfold in a cultivation environment, but I also know that these things will for sure be gradually removed during the course of your cultivation. Since [you are] cultivating, in the end everyone will have improved, and I know that, too. That's how it is when people cultivate in this setting. But none of you should let up, nor should you be indifferent when you see others sully Dafa's name—that is a requirement upon you. Being Dafa disciples, aren't you all to protect and validate the Fa? That is your responsibility. So things are not merely as you envision them as you go about cultivating. Though you are to regard cultivation as primary, you can't think no other things are important, thinking your family is unimportant, society is unimportant, etc., and that nothing else is important. Balancing all of those parts of your life well is the path that you are to walk. I've said that in your cultivation you should conform to the way of ordinary society to the greatest extent possible. Of course, there are all kinds of people. Those who try to damage the Fa have even said something in those labor camps that try to "transform" students, namely, "Hasn't Master said that while you cultivate you should conform to ordinary society to the greatest extent possible? You should go back to being an ordinary person and stop studying [Dafa]. Turn your books in." Yes, there are all kinds of people. But of course, are you, on a most fundamental level, a cultivator? If you separate yourself from even the Fa, how are you to cultivate? Many ordinary people call me Master, but they are not cultivators. In other words, not everyone who calls me Master counts as a cultivator. You must truly cultivate yourself in your everyday life, and truly regard yourself as a cultivator.

I said a few things just now. Your Fa conferences need to achieve real results. I listened to the students' speeches earlier. Your conference has been quite spirited, and it's quite good. So I'm pleased. I won't take up more of your time. I just came to see you all. Whenever I come, it is to, for one, address a few issues, and secondly, to see everybody. Haven't some people said that you have Master here and the Fa here? Well, then try to do well at all of the things that you are supposed to do. Thank you all. (*Long, enthusiastic applause*)

Li Hongzhi

May 28, 2006 in Toronto

For the Good of the World

Make clear the truth,
and drive off foul spirits.
Spread widely the Nine Commentaries,
and the wicked Party shall fade.
With righteous thoughts,
save the world's people.
I just don't believe their consciences
are irretrievably lost.

Li Hongzhi
June 15, 2006, in Philadelphia

To the Chicago Fa Conference

Greetings to all the Dafa disciples attending the Chicago Fa Conference!

First, let me wish the Fa Conference complete success in achieving its goals.

Dafa disciples' Fa conferences are Law assemblies where they improve by learning from each other, that allow them to find where they fall short, and that enable them to strengthen their righteous thoughts on their paths to Consummation. Your accomplishments reflect mighty virtue gained through sound Fa study and the solidifying of righteous thoughts, and your shortcomings tell of the things that you need to work on along your cultivation path. Whatever you experience during your cultivation—whether good or bad—is good, for it comes about only because you are cultivating. A cultivator cannot achieve Consummation when laden with human thoughts, laden with karmic debts, or laden with attachments. Gold's luster increases as it is refined over time. Through righteous thoughts and righteous acts, Dafa disciples are establishing every aspect of their divinity, and are, at the same time, building the cosmos's future.

Dafa disciples, be diligent!

Li Hongzhi

June 25, 2006

Opening the Gate of the World

The Dafa's vast spread
has stirred Heaven and Earth.
Wicked theories and deviant ideas
retreat before it, not a trace left.
The sinister Party and its perverse doctrine
fall apart overnight.
With the turning of Falun
a new century is born.

Li Hongzhi
July 1, 2006

Teaching the Fa at the Fa Conference at the U.S. Capital

(Enthusiastic applause)

Greetings, everyone! *(Disciples say, "Greetings, Master!")*

Quite a lot of people have come to this Fa conference. Students from many regions have come. One conference hall can't hold everyone, so several conference halls have been set up. Having cultivated as Dafa disciples up through today, you have become increasingly clearer on what this Dafa is that you cultivate, clearer on the responsibilities of Dafa disciples, and clearer on the importance of everything that Dafa disciples are doing today. And that is why you have grown ever more mature and done better and better as you go about saving beings, go about individual cultivation, and go about validating Dafa as Fa-Rectification Period Dafa Disciples. This can be seen well in the changes taking place in the overall state of things.

So as to the overall state of things at present, it is completely different now from back when the evil persecution began. The evil's persecution of Falun Gong has not managed to topple Falun Gong, but instead, they themselves have been toppled. *(Applause)* This is not simply persecution against a group of people in ordinary human society, nor is it simply persecution against a group of cultivators. This is a showdown between good and evil in the universe, and it is a showdown between beings who have been impacted during the Fa-rectification process and who are selfish, who do things for the sake of themselves, and who have become deviant, and the Fa-rectification itself. I said a long time ago that Fa-rectification would definitely succeed and that nobody could stop it. *(Applause)* This isn't some simple cultivation matter, nor is it a simple matter having to do with the group of kind-hearted citizens that here in human society is Falun Gong. Rather, this is a microcosm of the universe's Fa-rectification as reflected in human society, and in human society it is the focal point of all that is happening in the universe. From what is transpiring in ordinary human society we can see the overall state of the entire universe's Fa-rectification. Even though it's not a grand and spectacular display, something far-reaching and soul-stirring—as it is in the universe—it is the manifestation of the showdown between good and evil condensed down into human society, and one can see the interference that warped beings have caused during the Fa-rectification process.

There's something I said before, which was, "If the heavens want to have something change, nobody can stop it." *(Applause)* Then how about you, that puny wicked party? What does it amount to? If Dafa disciples' cultivation were to end today, if just this many people were to be saved—if the number of the world's people to be saved was just this many—and everything were to end at this point, it would take less than a day for the evil party to disintegrate. *(Applause)* That's because the purpose of its existence, the reason history created it in the first place, and the process of sustaining it all have been for the sake of Dafa disciples validating the Fa today. That is what the old forces arranged. When it's no longer of any use, why would it be kept? It is nothing in the universe. Only the cultivation of Dafa disciples and the saving of sentient beings are concrete and real. Only the elevation of Dafa disciples' levels and only the mighty virtue that Dafa disciples have been establishing during this process are eternal. They are for the future. What significance do other things have, then? None whatsoever. Anyone or anything that has had an interfering effect during this period will be disintegrated and completely destroyed as they pay their debts.

Of course, everything that Dafa disciples display during the process of cultivating and validating the Fa can only be considered a manifestation while in a state of cultivation. During that process there are sure

to be those who do well and those who do a little worse, those who aren't solid and become unsteady, and of course there are also those who are very steadfast and good. All of these are manifestations in that process, and that's just how cultivation goes. These are different from the *xinxing* tests focused on the individual that were found in the cultivation formats of the past. You all know about those past formats of cultivation. Whatever the case, the tests of *xinxing* they met with as they cultivated all dealt with issues of the individual. Now things are different. The Fa is immense, and the main purpose is the Fa-rectification of the universe. What is demonstrated as Dafa disciples do their cultivation is completely different from that of past cultivations, where the goal was one's own consummation.

I said long ago that the cultivation Dafa disciples do takes the format of cultivation that conforms to ordinary human society to the maximum extent; one cultivates while conforming to the way of ordinary people to the maximum extent. Then the type of cultivation that conforms to the way of ordinary human society entails that type of cultivation state. The state of cultivation is different from any cultivation method or state in history. If you tried to use any other cultivation method or cultivation way as a reference you wouldn't find a match, for this has never existed before. Never has there been something as huge as Fa-rectification, nor has there ever been something that forges such a large group of beings and at such a high Attainment Status. Also, the most crucial thing is that no person has ever succeeded in cultivation; those that did succeed were all subordinate souls. Never in history has a human being become a divine being, so [what we're doing] doesn't fit any format of cultivation of the past. In this cultivation environment and during the cultivation process of Dafa disciples, there are instances where you do cooperate well and ones where you don't, and sometimes you encounter a steady stream of conflicts and tensions. There are also instances in which Dafa disciples are able to resolve problems while improving together and yet waves of conflicts and such keep arising. Sometimes the manifestations are intense, sometimes they are mild, and sometimes after a period of time in cultivation things repeat themselves and new conflicts and tensions surface, even to the point where they are more severe than before. Some people then think: "Goodness... We cultivate round and round, and yet these conflicts and things are still this intense? Why are there still conflicts after all that cultivating? We cultivate and cultivate, so why does it seem we're not even as good as before? After so much cultivating, why is it that we can't see any improvement?" Many people have thoughts like that. Actually, that's the wrong conclusion to draw, and it reflects a complete lack of understanding of the form that Dafa disciples' cultivation takes.

I set forth that Dafa disciples are to cultivate in ordinary human society, and while this opened up the most convenient way—[enabling people to] cultivate into Gods and Buddhas without leaving the secular world—as you know, the different things that come about when ordinary-society type attachments collide with one another, and the state that people are in amidst the realities of society as morality declines and falls apart, pose enormous challenges. And it doesn't stop at that. In gods' eyes, this place is dangerous and filthy, and karma is everywhere. The karma that people carry on their bodies is so much that it drips off of them even as they walk down the street. And then there are the wicked demons of feelings (*qing*) and rotten ghosts that fill the human world. All of these things are matter at the lowest level that has warped. Then a setting like this, in terms of cultivation, poses not just a test of whether you can improve here, but furthermore would seriously contaminate the part of you that had been successfully cultivated upon your improvement. That would be something utterly unavoidable. Could a person cultivate that way? You would keep on cultivating, and keep getting contaminated, keep cultivating, keep getting contaminated, on and on. Could you succeed cultivating in that way? You couldn't. So I took this into consideration when I was determining this form of cultivation. Thus, during the cultivation process, as soon as a cultivator has successfully cultivated a part, with his realm being elevated and him passing some test, that part is immediately partitioned off in a manner unconstrained by time. (*Applause*). [That part] no longer has any contact with the human

world, and it is partitioned off by a huge amount of space and time. For example, it might be partitioned off to a time millions or tens of millions of years later. Could you contaminate him, then? He's beyond reach. He might be mere inches away, but the enormous time and spatial differences result in this dimension not being able to interfere one bit with the part of the Dafa disciple that has been successfully cultivated. I am just illustrating the idea—it's partitioned off. So as parts are continually being fully cultivated, they are continually partitioned off. As parts continue to be fully cultivated, they are continually partitioned off; the part that hasn't been fully cultivated, meanwhile, constantly undergoes cultivation until the point where nothing remains and everything has been successfully cultivated. That is the cultivation path you are to take.

Then as you go through that process, think about it: isn't the part of you that shows itself in ordinary human society—a part that hasn't been successfully cultivated—that of a human being cultivating? Since it is a human being cultivating, he has human thoughts and behavior. Since it's a human being cultivating, he has all kinds of bad human thoughts that have either formed over time or are caused by new contamination from society. Then as a cultivator, [you may be thinking,] "What counts as cultivating?" Well, doing the things that Dafa disciples are supposed to do, such as things that validate the Fa and that save sentient beings, among others, is one's duty-bound responsibility and a part of establishing mighty virtue. But being able to improve yourself is the most crucial. That is because if you don't improve yourself, you won't be able to do any of those things well. So when you are strict with yourself, discover your shortcomings, and constantly get rid of them, then you are cultivating. If while you are going through a test you come to understand something, and become clear on it, and handle things well, then you will have elevated. The elevated part is partitioned off, and with more elevation, there is more partitioning. Meanwhile what's left is once again the part that hasn't been fully cultivated; since it's the part that hasn't yet been fully cultivated, that part is still in the human world. Think about it, then: wouldn't it look as if this person is always cultivating—and doing so fruitlessly—and not making any marked improvements? Why is it that he can't display his divine side? When a person has cultivated well you can only see, looking at the surface, that the person is quite diligent. Being diligent means that he is able to watch his words and actions closely every moment, pay close attention to his thoughts, and is able to be strict with himself, and is usually able to conduct himself strictly. That describes someone who is diligent in cultivation. As long as a person is still cultivating, his divine side can't come over, and you won't see the true display of a god in human society. Cultivating in such a way ensures that the side that has been fully cultivated won't be contaminated, it ensures that the person can keep cultivating while not seeing the truth in this delusory setting, and it ensures that Dafa disciples will be able to validate an even higher Attainment Status. At the same time, it also ensures that during this period the human world isn't impacted and altered by the divine side. When a human being persistently forges ahead like this, is able to cultivate tirelessly in this persecutory and harsh environment, and is able to be diligent, even managing to save sentient beings and do even better, isn't that magnificent?

This is what the Dafa disciples are facing today, and it is a form of cultivation brought about by interference from the old forces and company. So during your cultivation process, as long as the side of you that has been fully cultivated goes over and is partitioned off, everything that you haven't fully cultivated will still manifest. Human attachments will still show themselves, just as will bad elements. When tensions or conflicts emerge it can't be said that Dafa disciples haven't cultivated well, nor can this and that be said about that particular group of cultivators, and it can't be said that the individuals involved aren't diligent. You can never see the side that has been fully cultivated. That side has become divine, and only the side that hasn't been fully cultivated shows itself. But those people are truly cultivating. They are not only cultivating, they have already established their own immense Attainment Status and gigantic changes in their entire bodies, with many parts of their bodies having been

cultivated into gods. Can ordinary people compare to these Dafa disciples? No, they can't.

If we look for a moment at just the situations where these conflicts and things arise, they are still different from those that occur in ordinary human society. The conflicts and tensions that Dafa disciples encounter are solely for the sake of cultivation and the sake of validating the Fa. Even though human attachments, the attachment of showing off, the attachments of the individual, and the elements of human beings that want to validate themselves are involved, [Dafa disciples] know about these and once they are discovered, they will fix them. That is completely different from ordinary people. So there will be problems between Dafa disciples, and, moreover, such things play an additional role. Namely, once the conflict or tension surfaces, it will affect other people. Once others take notice of it, the conflict or tension will intensify, which will then make the cultivators involved take notice of it. If [a cultivator] can look within when going through that, he will be able to find his shortcomings. If the conflict or tension were not brought to the surface or didn't appear, you wouldn't be able to discover your attachments and identify them. When all is calm and smooth, can you cultivate yourself?

There are many religious groups today who say: "Oh, look at how good things are with us here. Everyone is very caring and loving towards one another." What are they loving, though? (*Audience laughs*) They love attachments, love happiness in the mortal world, and love maintaining that human pleasantness among people. Is that cultivation? It's not! Absolutely not. That's only a shield used to protect human attachments. I do hope that the problems between Dafa disciples [dwindle]—the fewer the better. But when things of that nature are as few as possible, it is because an environment and a state have been created by your being able to search inside and be alert when these tensions arise. That's my wish, and it would be best if everyone could achieve it. What happens if people can't achieve it? Even if they can't achieve it, it's still cultivation. It's just that they haven't been diligent enough in this state that is our cultivation environment; they are still cultivating, though. This is precisely the state of the cultivation environment that Dafa disciples have at the current stage. Let me tell all of you again: when conflicts or tensions take place, there is nothing to be afraid of—just cultivate and do well. Even for those in mainland China who haven't done well or haven't done well enough, or who have even done very bad things, before this affair ends those things are still manifestations in personal cultivation. But time waits for no one, and there are fewer and fewer opportunities.

As a human being cultivates into a god, during this heart-wrenching, agonizing process of removing attachments—think about it everyone—what kinds of things might he be capable of exhibiting? It might be that he is capable of anything. But once he realizes it, he can correct it. And why can he do that? It's not done for the sake of being a good ordinary person, but rather, to cultivate to Consummation. (*Applause*) That is sacred, and that is walking the path toward godhood. It's different from what happens in any disagreement ordinary people might have. The form it takes won't be any different, but the starting point and the goal will be different, and even the things that people do and the states of mind people are in throughout the process won't be exactly the same. So you must recognize this. Since today I'm going into greater depth about the format and state of cultivation and spelling things out, when you cooperate with each other [from now on] you shouldn't have the attachment of putting up your guard against others anymore. (*Applause*) Whether it be your blaming each other, using human attachments to push each other away, or all kinds of states—I can tell you, all of those are new attachments that appeared due to your not understanding the format of [Dafa] cultivation. Isn't that the case? Yes, it is! So, don't develop a new attachment as a result of not understanding the state of cultivation. That attachment would itself be a giant impediment to progress in your cultivation, so you need to get rid of it, too.

A lot of conflicts and tensions come about as practitioners cultivate. When there are many many

attachments that can't be let go, your [cultivation] environment won't be good. If the opposite is true, then it will be excellent. If you don't search inward when certain problems and conflicts surface, they will intensify, and it happens because of your own attachments. Some become more and more intense, and they're in fact caused by the person's not having cultivated well. It continues until [the conflict] can't be resolved and that person is confused and bothered by the state he finds himself in. What's to be done, then? [They decide,] "Let's go find Master." Every time things get out of hand, people go looking for Master. It's always because they can't overcome it, or don't want to overcome it, that they go looking for Master. Is it that you're trying to help Master cultivate? (*Master chuckles*) (*Audience laughs*) Or is it you who are cultivating? (*Applause*)

Cultivation is about cultivating one's self. No matter what kind of state emerges, you need to take a hard look at yourself. I can tell you, if an ordinary person is able to look at himself whenever he encounters problems, he will become what ordinary people call a sage. When a Dafa disciple has a hard time with something and needs to think things over, he should look for things starting with himself and do things in line with the environment needed by Dafa disciples and the Fa-rectification. When a problem occurs, it is because that person is stubbornly going against the Fa principles. Go and find where the problem lies, let go of that stubbornness, and sort things out. When you encounter something, the best approach is not to charge forward and contend with others, push your way to the front, and rush forward to chase down the solution. Let go of your attachment, take a step back, and then resolve it. (*Applause*) If whenever something happens you instantly jump into who's right, whose problem it is, and how you have done, then while on the surface it looks like you are resolving the conflict or tension, in reality that's not the case at all. On the surface it looks plenty rational, but in reality that's not rational at all. You haven't taken a step back and fully cast off your attachment, and then thought the issue over. Only after a person calmly and peacefully withdraws from a conflict and then looks at it can he truly resolve it.

If you can conduct yourself in that manner with whatever you encounter, at a minimum you will find a way to resolve the problem. Otherwise how could you resolve it? When a person charges forward and is contentious, the more he wants to resolve it, the less he is able to. In that scenario you still haven't in fact let go of that attachment and you are pushing your way to the front, and you insist on figuring out who's right and who's wrong; even though you've made mistakes, you insist on figuring out others' mistakes. When that's the approach, you won't be able to resolve the problem. Many things end up like that. And when the problem can't be resolved, you want to go find Master. There are often reasons why I don't want to meet with practitioners, though in fact I really like being with you. (*Applause*) You have seen what the people in today's society have become. I don't want to even lay eyes upon their dirty thoughts and behavior. I'd rather interact with Dafa disciples. But as soon as I meet with you, you bring up a lot of questions (*audience laughs*), and you thrust upon me many things that you are supposed to work on as you cultivate. So I am left with no choice, and I thus don't dare to meet with you. (*Audience laughs*)

If all of you are able to search inward, many problems will be resolved, there won't be so many tensions, and in turn there won't be such intense things flaring up. Even though Master has said that, it's human beings cultivating, after all. Even though Dafa disciples have journeyed so far and cultivated to where they are today, it is still human beings cultivating, after all. The good sides are divine and have been partitioned off, so human attachments still show. It gets to the point where some practitioners ask me: "Master, I've cultivated for such a long time. Why are those bad thoughts of mine still so strong? Why is it that I still can't expel them?" That's true. As long as you haven't finished your cultivation, you are in the midst of the contamination [I described]. As long as you haven't completed cultivation and your old elements haven't been completely removed, those elements will manifest. Only when they are gone will there be no more problems. Even though I've said that, nobody should

turn lax, thinking: “Oh, so that’s how it is. In that case I don’t have anything to worry about. (*Audience laughs*) If it emerges, so be it. I won’t trouble myself with it anymore.” That wouldn’t do! Cultivation is first and foremost. I just said that if you aren’t able to suppress it, if you can’t look inward and search within yourself when you encounter tensions or conflicts, if you can’t change yourself and remove human attachments, then you won’t have parts that are fully cultivated and that become divine, and what you do can’t be called cultivating. So you need to constantly cultivate the part of you that hasn’t been fully cultivated, such that it achieves divinity and is fully cultivated, and you must be strict with yourself—only then is it cultivation. Otherwise, what’s the point of cultivation?

You know, many religions have reached the Age of Law’s End. It’s not that people truly want to act the way they do; it owes to people having become confused and foggy-headed. People take actively doing things to be cultivation, and they take preserving religious formats to be cultivation. Actually, gods don’t place any importance on those things. They only consider the improvement of people’s minds important, for *that* is true improvement. The environment [created by the religious formats] is merely meant to provide cultivators or those who believe in Buddha or God a setting in which to improve together, and it’s so that people can learn from one another. It’s just like Dafa disciples getting together to hold Fa conferences, getting together to study the Fa and share experiences, and doing the exercises together. Dafa disciples spend relatively little time in such a setting, and yet those are the only opportunities you have to discuss things and learn from each other. More opportunities [for interaction] and more time are spent in ordinary society, and the tensions and conflicts you encounter mainly come up in ordinary society. That’s exactly the form your cultivation [takes]. It can’t be said that you haven’t cultivated well, then, nor that Dafa disciples are not diligent. There are going to be conflicts and problems between people. What’s important is how you handle them.

I just now discussed this topic with you one step further. Actually, all of the Fa that I’ve taught is from the one volume of Fa. Take a close look at *Zhuan Falun*, and [you will see that] all the Fa that I have taught after the book’s publication is an explanation of *Zhuan Falun*. If you don’t believe it, you should go and look. Cultivating according to *Zhuan Falun* will lead you to success in cultivation. (*Applause*)

Let me take this opportunity to mention something. When Dafa disciples do things together, you should really cooperate well with each other. The changes in the overall state of things have been large. You have seen that many things still face obstacles, but once all of those obstacles are done away with, this affair will end. The current state of things owes precisely to those things not having been cleared away yet, to there still being many people who are lost because of the lies, and to there still being many who are unwilling to learn the truth. But this state is constantly melting away, much like ice does. Once it has all melted away, this environment will no longer exist. Those who want to cultivate and improve will have no setting in which to do so. Those who want to save sentient beings will find that human beings all understand things, and so there will be no need to do that. In other words, once it truly reaches that point, there will be nothing left to do. So it’s exactly because right now there are many things that need to be done and many people are still not aware [of what’s really going on] that we have the situation we are seeing today and there is a need for you to do things. And the changes to this state are in turn inseparable from everything that Dafa disciples are contributing as they clarify the truth and save sentient beings. Of course, the effect of the Fa-rectification’s situation is part of it too, but if the Dafa disciples don’t all clarify the truth to individual people, or clarify the truth to society, then as for the process of ordinary people’s minds being transformed at the surface level, that’s not something gods will do for them on an individual basis. So things that involve the surface level of human beings have to be done by Dafa disciples.

People with predestined relationships and those who can be saved can be made to—made to by Master’s Law Bodies, righteous gods, or the immense field that Dafa has formed in the world—appear

right before you in any of a range of settings, providing them with a chance to learn the truth. But you have to carry it out, and it doesn't work if you're not out there doing things. Even though the overall state of affairs has undergone huge changes, the pressure [of what lies] before you hasn't lessened. Saving people right now is an urgent matter; there are still many people who haven't seen the truth. What holds true for how ordinary people are is the same for how the various governments will behave: regardless of whether they have correct understandings or not, and regardless of what kinds of thoughts they have, when presented with the facts they will be convinced and they must look at things righteously. Whether it is cultivation or saving sentient beings—the target is the person's mind, not some entity. Things haven't been set, with a certain nationality being designated to be kept or some other to be discarded. That's definitely not the case. It doesn't matter what country a person is from or which corner of the world he lives in, [our efforts] target only the person's mind, not some entity.

Many of our Dafa disciples have seen true scenes from the future; those aren't false. Step by step, with the changes that come over time, those things are drawing ever closer. So, as Dafa disciples you should do well what you are supposed to do. Don't worry about what's going to transpire in the future, it's enough if you know inside what you should do, carrying the Fa in your mind, doing whatever needs to be done, and doing whatever you wish to do, as long as Dafa needs it. (*Applause*) Don't go to extremes with anything; do things rationally and with a clear head. *That* is the mighty virtue of a Dafa disciple. Whoever manages to remain steady while following this ordinary-society cultivation format, that person is truly doing what's best in this format of cultivation. If with this format someone exhibits behavior that is out of line with this format and at odds with it, then perhaps that person hasn't done well enough. Since Dafa disciples' cultivation is conducted with a format like this, this format is able to forge Dafa disciples, and it can create incredibly high future Attainment Statuses. Departing from this format or not conforming to it will obstruct your cultivation; those things are actually the product of attachments.

I have said these things and talked about these issues with you today because at present there are many things that haven't been done well enough, and there are a lot of prominent problems. There have been states that are less than satisfactory as you work together, and so Master has addressed these things. Today I mainly came to see you all. The Fa conference is a good opportunity for you to discuss and to learn from one another. Master won't talk any further. I'll conclude here. Thank you! (*Enthusiastic applause*)

I am so happy seeing you. (*Applause*) Every time I see you, [I can tell that] there has been a striking change in the larger situation and the overall state of affairs. It's the same every time, so I would say that the environment Dafa disciples have can temper people. As a Dafa disciple in this society, no matter what kind of setting or corner of society you find yourself in, you are playing a positive role. Regardless of whether you are clarifying the truth and validating the Fa or doing things not so directly connected to Dafa, you are nonetheless saving sentient beings and are playing huge roles (*applause*), and that is because your righteous thoughts and compassionate field are having a positive effect. I hope that you will do even better in the time ahead. (*Applause*) Everything that Dafa disciples have achieved will soon be revealed. Thank you! (*Long applause*)

Li Hongzhi
July 22, 2006

Thoroughly Dissolve the Evil

As a result of the righteous thoughts that Dafa disciples have put into validating the Fa and saving the world's people, the complete dissolution of the evil beings and elements that play a negative role and persecute Dafa disciples is taking place. Right now, there are only a small number of evil, rotten demons, and they are being concentrated by the old forces in labor camps, jails, and other dark dens that are taking part in persecuting Dafa disciples. This has caused the evil's persecution to remain severe in certain, limited areas. In order to completely eliminate the persecution of Dafa disciples by the dark minions, rotten demons, and old forces, all Dafa disciples around the world—particularly the Dafa disciples in each region of mainland China—are to concertedly send righteous thoughts toward those evil places, thoroughly dissolving all evil beings and elements that persecute Dafa disciples, clearing away the evil circumstances under which Dafa disciples are persecuted in mainland China, and saving the world's people, [thereby] fulfilling the duties of a Dafa disciple and advancing toward godhood.

Li Hongzhi
October 24, 2006

To the Australia Fa Conference

All Dafa Disciples at the Australia Fa Conference:

Greetings! First, I would like to wish the conference success. Fa conferences are grand gatherings of Dafa disciples, are good opportunities to help each other improve, and testify to [the power of] good Fa-study.

In order for Dafa disciples to walk their paths well and do the three things well, they must study the Fa well and take Fa-study seriously. The regions that have done well saving sentient beings and validating Dafa, and where great changes have transpired, are always places where people have studied the Fa well. And the Dafa disciples who have improved quickly are always those who have made Fa-study a priority. That is because the Fa is the foundation; it is what's fundamental for Dafa disciples; it is what ensures everything; and it is the avenue by which a human being journeys toward godhood. Thus I would like to take the opportunity of this Fa conference in Australia to tell all Dafa disciples around the world: Whether you are a new or veteran student, all the same you must not neglect Fa-study on account of being busy. Don't just go through the motions when you study the Fa. You should study with a concentrated mind, and you must really be studying. There have been so many lessons involving this. I hope all of you do well on the final leg of the journey. The future will soon be displayed before [the world's] eyes.

Li Hongzhi

October 18, 2006